

# Sermons conteyned in this present volume.

1	Fruitefull exhortation to the reading Scripture.	of holy
411	Scripture. 2. Of the miscrie of all mankind. 2.	page
3	Of the faluation of all manking, 3	19
4	Of the true and lucip farth. 3	29
	Df good woorkes. 3. Df Christian loue and charitie. 2.	53
0951	Against (wearing and periurie. 2. Df the declining from God. 2.	59
9	An exhortation agapust the feare of Death. 3	76
TO	An exhautation to obedience, 3.	88
11	Against whoozedome and adultetic, 3. Against strife and contention. 3.	114
	31- 100-1000 10 21000	

Finis Tabulz.

### The Preface.

Onfidering how necessarie it is, that the woorde of God, which is the onely foode of the foule, & that most excellent light that we must walke by, in this our most daungerous pilgrimage, shoulde at all convenient times be preached wnto the people, that thereby they may both learne their duetie towards God, their Prince, and their neighbours, according to the mind of the holy ghoft, expressed in the scriptures: And also to avoid the manyfold inormities which heretofore by falle doctrine have crept into the Church of God: and howe that all they which are appointed Ministers, haue not the gift of preaching sufficiently to instruct the people, which is committed vnto them, whereof great inconveniences might rile, and ignorance still be mainteyned, if some honest remedie bee not speedily founde and provided. The Queenes most excellent Maiestie, tendering the soule health of her louing subjects, and the quieting of their consciences, in the chiefe and principall pointes of Christian religion, and willing also by the true setting forth, and pure declaring of Gods worde, which is the principall guide and leader vnto al godlines and vertue, to expel and drive away aswell al corrupt, vitious, and vngodly liuing, as also erronious and poysoned doctrines, tending to superstition and idolatry: hath by the aduice of her most honourable Counsellours, for her discharge in this behalfe, caused a booke of Homilies, which heretofore was set foorth by her most louing brother, a Prince of most woorthie memorie Edward the fixt, to be printed anewe, wherein are conteyned certaine wholefome and godly exhortations, to moue the people to honour and worship almightie God, and diligently to serue him, every one according to their degree, state and vocation, All which Homilies, her Maiestie commaundeth, and straightly chargeth all Parsons, Vicars, Curates, and all other having spirituall cure, every Sunday and holye day in the yeere, at the ministring of the holye Communion, or if there bee no Communion ministred that day, yet after the Gospell and Creede, in suche order and place as is appoynted in the booke of Common prayers, to reade and declare to their parishioners plainly and distinctly one of the A.it.

The Preface.

fayde Homilies, in Such order as they stande in the booke, except there be a Sermon, according as it is inioined in the booke of her highnes injunctions, and then for that cause onely, and for none other, the reading of the fayde Homilie to be deferred viito the next Sunday or holy day following. And when the forefayde booke of Homilles is read ouer, her Maiefties pleafure is, that the fame be repeated and read againe in such like fore as was before prescribed. Furthermore, her highneffe commandeth, that notwithflanding this order, the fayd Ecclesiasticall persons shall reade her Maiesties Iniunctions, at such times, and in such order, as is in the booke thereof appointed. And that the Lordes praier, the Articles of the fayth, and the ten Commaundements, be openly read vnto the people, as in the fayde Iniunctions is specified, char all her people, of what degree or condition soeuer they be, may learne howe to inuocate and call vpon the name of God, and knowe what duetie they owe both to God and man : fo that they may pray, Beleeue, and woorke according to knowledge, while they thall line here, and after this

life be with him that with his blood trath bought age

vs. all. To whom with the father and the holy ghoft, be all honour and

of Christian religion, and value and violance the series sound, and pure declaring of Gods worden with B the principall guide and leader vinto al godlines and vertue, to expel and drive away afwell all cader vinto al godlines and vertue, to expel and drive away afwell all limited itious, and vagodly lining, as also erronious and poyloned documented in a to superfittion and idelatry : hath by the advice of bermoft honourable Countellours, for her difference in this behalfe cauled a booke of Bootte, which heretofore was fet foorth by her med louing brother, a Prince of most woorthie memorie Edward the fixt, to be printed anewe, wherein are conteyned certaine wholedome and rodly exhorazions, to moue the people to honour and worthip almightic God, and diligently to ferue him, enery one according to their degree, frate and vocation. All which welles her Maiellie commaundeth, and firaightly chargeth all Parfons, Vicars, Carates, and allother having spiritual cure, every Sunday and holye day in the yeere, at the ministring of the holye Communion, or it elected to Continuation ministred that day, ver after the Golpell and Creade, in Inche order and place as is appropried in the booke of Common prayers, to reade and declare to their parishioners plainly and distinctly one of the

.21. A.

2000

### A fruitfull exhortation to the reading and same lidel a knowledge of holy Cripture, 20 23 of sled time

their papages to cinar leaving a knowe our felice

Ato a Chaiftian man there can be nothing eis ther moze necessarie or profitable , then the knowledge of holy feripture, foralmuch as in it feronier. ts conterned Gods true word, fetting forth his The perglozp, and also mans duerp. and there is no fection of hohe ferip truth not botteine necessarie for our instifica fure.

Is tion and everlatting faluation but that is ( of knowledge may be) Deawne out of that fountaine & well of trueth. Theres of holpe fore as many as be destrous to enter into the right and perfect from we way buto God, muft applie their mindes to know boly feripture, Con without the which, they can neither Aufliciently knowe God and the know his will neither their office and butie. Ind as brinke is pleafant ly firms to them that be drie, and meate to them that be hungrie: fois the finet and reading bearing, tearching, and fludying of holy Script are, to pleafant. them that be deficous to know God or themschies, and to do his numico to will. And their fromackes onelie bo lothe and abhorre the heas holy forips nenlie knowledge and foode of Gods worde, that be lo drowned anapt G. in worldie banities, that they neither fauout God, nor any god militude, linelle : for that is the cause toby they befire such vanities, ras of whom therethen the true knowledge of God. As they that are licke of the lor an aque, whatfocuer they eate and brinke (though it be never fo bourto. pleatant) pet it is as bitter to them as moumewood, not for the bitternesse of the meate, but for the corrupt and bitter bumour that is in their owne toughe and mouth: even fo is the freetnes of Gods word bitter, not of it felfe, but only but them that have their mindes corrupted with long cultome of linne and love of this world. Therefore forlaking the corrupt indgement of fleshly In whole men, which care not but for their carkeis: let vereuerently heare the pilinger and reade holy feriptures, which is the foode of the foule. Let be reading diligentlie fearche for the well of life in the bookes of the news of the and old Testament, a not runne to the ftinking puddles of mens freprine. traditions (Denifed by mens imagination ) for our instification and faluation. For in holy feripture is fullie conteined what we ought to bo, and what to eschewe, what to beleeve, what to love, supported by the looks for at Good have got length The the looks for the contract of the looks for the lo and what to looke for at Gods handes at length. In thele bookes a fufficient we shall find the father from whom, the some by whom, and the for our falholy aboft, in bohom all things have their being and keeping by, nation.

A.iii.

222 hat

and thefe three perfons to be but one God, & one fubffance. these bookes we may learne to knowe our selves, howe bile and miscrable we be, a also to know God how good he is of himselfe. may learne and how be maketh be and all creatures partakers ofhis goods in the boly neffe. We may learne also in these bookes to knowe Gods will and pleasure as much as (for this present time) is convenient for by to know. And (as the great Clarke and godly preacher Saint Iohn Chryfostome faith) whatsoeuer is required to falua: tion of man, is fullie conteined in the scripture of God. De that is ignorant, may there learne a have knowledge. Be that is hard hearted, and an obstinate linner, shall there finde cuerlasting toze ments (prepared of Gods inflice) to make him afraid, and to mole life oxforten him. De that is oppressed with milerie in this world, thall there find reliefe in the promites of euerlasting life, to his great confolation and comfort. De that is wounded by the deuill buto beath, thall finde there medicine whereby he may be reftored againe buto health. If it thall require to teach any truth, or reprove falle doctrine, to rebuke any bice, to commend any ber= tue, to give good counfell, to comfort or to exhort, or to do any os ther thing requilite for our faluation, all those things (faith Saint Chryfostome) we may learne plentifully of the scripture. There boly frip is (faith Fulgentius) abumbantly inough, both for men to cate, and freth fur- children to lucke. There is what focuer is meete for al ages, and ficient boe for all Degrees and forts of men. Thefe bookes therefore ought to begrees be much in our hands, in our eles, in our eares, in our mouthes, but most of all in our hearts. for the scripture of God is the heauenly meate of our foules, the hearing and keeping of it maketh bs bleffed, fanctifieth bs, a maketh bs holie, it turneth our foules. mont co it is a light lanterne to our feete, it is a fure, ftedfaft, and enerlahours, the fring instrument of saluation, it giveth wisdome to the humble owicos and lowly hearts, it comforteth, maketh glad, cheareth, and cheritheth our conscience: it is a more excellent ie well or treasure, then any golde of precious frome, it is more freete then bony, or hony combe, it is called the best part, which ABaric Did choole, for it hath in it everlatting comfort. The woordes of holie Scrips ture be called wordes of everlafting life : for they be Gods inftrus ment, orderned for the same purpose. They have power to turne through Gods promile, and they be effectuall through Gods as fiftance, and (being recepted in a faithfull heart) they have ence

Matth.4.

Luke.3. Iohn, 17.

Pfal, 19

of holie

Cripture bringeth. Luke 10.

Cottof.6.

Heb.4

an

to holy Scripture.

elfe.

edoc

will ent

ber

ua:

bat

ard

02=

ols

ID.

bis

Illu

to=

02

er=

0=

int

re

de

D

to

g,

a=

th

3:

t=

11 p

it

4

an heavenly foirituall working in them: they are livelie; quicke; and mighty in operation & fharper then any two edged (morde, and entreth through, even buto the dividing afunder of the foule and the fricit, of the tointes and the marowe. Chaift calleth him Mankey. a wife builder, that buildeth bpon his worde, bpon his fure and lobert Substancial foundation. By this worde of God; we shall be inde ned: for the worde that I weake, (faith Chrich) is it that hall judge in the last day. De that keepeth the worde of Chrift, is promiled the love and favour of God, and that he hall be the Dwelling place of temple of the bleffed Trinitie. This word, who focuer is diligent to reade, and in his heart to print that he readeth, the great affection to the transitorie things of this world. halbe mis nifbed in him, and the great beare of heavenly things (that be therein promiled of God) hall increase in bin. And there is nothing that to much ftreatheneth our faith and truft in God, that fo much beeveth by innocency and purcheffe of the heart, and also of outward godlie life and convertation as cotinual reading and recording of Gods word. for that thing, which by continual ble of reading of bolie (cripture, and biligent fearching of the fame) is becordie printed and graven in the heart, at length turneth almost into nature. And mozcover, the effect and bertue of Bobs word is, to illuminate the ignorant, and to give more light buto them that faithfullie and Diligentlie reade it, to comfort their bearts, and to encourage them to verformethat, which of God is commanded. At teacheth patience in all aduer litie in profectitie. Regate bumblenes: what honor is due buto God, what mercie and cha 1. Cor. 15 ritie to our neighbour. It guieth good countaile in all Doubtfull aloha, s. things. It the weth of whom we thall looke for appeand before in all perils . and that God is the onetie civer of vicrozic, in all bats tailes and temptations of our enemies, bodilie and aboffly. And in reading of Gods word, he most profiteth not alwayes, that is who promost readie in turning of the booke, or in saying of it without fit most in the booke, but he that is most turned into it, that is most inspired good word with the holie about, most in his heart elife altered and changed into that thing which bereadeth: he that is daply leffe and leffe proude, leffe wathfull, leffe conetous, and leffe defirous of world= lie and baine pleafuces: he that dayly (forfaking his old bicious life increaleth in bertue moze and moze. And to be flort there is nothing that moze maintemeth godlineffe of the minde and baps A.iiii.

### The.i.part of the Exhortation.

20 hat feriotime.

and thefe three perfore to be but one God, & one fubifance. thefe bookes we may learne to knowe our felues, howe vile and milerable we be, a allo to know God, how good he is of himfelfe. apleame and how he maketh be and all creatures partakers ofhis goods in the holy neffe. me may learne allo in thefe bookes to knowe Gods will and pleasure as much as (for this present time) is convenient for be to know. And (as the great Clarke and godly preacher Saint Iohn Chryfostome faith) whatsoeuer is required to falua: tion of man, is fullie conteined in the scripture of God. De that is ignorant, may there learne a baue knowledge, Bethat is bard bearted, and an obstinate linner, shall there finde cuerlasting toze ments (prepared of Gods inflice) to make him afraid, and to mollife oxfoften him. De that is oppressed with miserie in this world, thall there find reliete in the promites of euerlasting life, to his great confolation and comfort. De that is wounded by the deuill buto beath, thall finde there medicine whereby he may be reftored againe buto health. If it thall require to teach any truth, or reprove falle doctrine, to rebuke any bice, to commend any ber= tue to give good counfell to comfort or to exhort, or to do any os ther thing requilite for our faluation, all those things (faith Saint Chrysostome) we may learne plentifully of the scripture. There holy frip ig (faith Fulgentius) abundantly inough, both for men to cate, and freth fut- children to lucke. There is, what focuer is meete for al ages, and ficient boe for all begrees and forts of men. Thefe bookes therefore ought to begreen be much in our hands, in our eies, in our eares, in our mouthes, but most of all in our hearts. for the scripture of God is the heauculy meate of our foules, the hearing and keeping of it maketh by bleffed, fanctifieth by a maketh by holic, it turneth our foules. it is a light lanterne to our feete, it is a fure, ftedfaft, and cuerla: hours, the fring inftrument of faluation, it giveth wildome to the humble unofoleog and lowly hearts, it comforteth, maketh glad, cheareth, and cheritheth our conscience: it is a more excellent ie well or treasure, then any golde of precious frome, it is more frecte then bony, or hony combe, it is called the best part, which Maric Did choole, for it hath in it everlatting comfort. The woordes of holie Scrip. ture be called wordes of everlafting life : forther be Godsinfrus ment, orderned for the same purpose. They have power to turne through Gods promile, and they be effectuall through Gods al

fiftance, and (being recepued in a faithfull heart) they have euct

Ichn ..

Matth.4.

Luke.3. Iohn, 17.

Pfal, 19. What co=

of holie

Luke 10.

Cripture bringeth.

Collof.6.

an

3

an heavenly fpirituall working urthem: they are livelie; quicke; and mighty in operation, a fharper then any two edged (morde, and entreth through, even buto the dunding afumber of the foule and the wirit, of the wintes and the marowe. Chaift calleth him Manking a wife builder, that buildeth bpon his worde, bpon his fure and lobe Substanciali foundation. Bythis worde of God; we shall be inde ged : for the worde that I weake, (faith Chrice) is it, that that judge in the last day. De that keepeth the worde of Christ, is promiled the love and favour of God, and that he shall be the dwelling place of temple of the bleffed Trinitie. This word, who focuer is diligent to reade, and in his heart to print that he readeth, the great affection to the transitorie things of this world, halbe mis nifed in him, and the great deare of heavenly things (that be therein promiled of God) thall increase in him. And there is nothing that to much streatheneth our faith and trust in God, that fo much beepeth by innocency and purcheffe of the heart, and also of outward godie life and convertation, as cotinual reading and recording of Gods word. For that thing, which (by continual ble of reading of holie (cripture, and biligent fearching of the fame) is occuelle printed and graven in the heart, at length turneth almoft into nature. And mozcouer, the effect and bertue of Gods word is, to illuminate the ignorant, and to give more light buto them, that faithfullie and biligentlie reade it, to comfort their bearts, and to encourage them to performethat, which of Godis commanded. It teacheth patience in all aduerlitie, in profperitie, . Reg. 4 bumblenes: what honor is due buto God, what mercie and chas 1. Cor. 15 ritie to our neighboin. It gineth good countaile in all Doubtfull aloha, s. things. It heweth of whom we thall looke for appe and helpe in all perils and that God is the onehe giner of vicrozie, mall battailes and temptations of our enemies, bodilie and ghoffly. And in reading of Gods word, he most profitcth not alwayes, that is who promost readie in turning of the booke, or in caping of it without reading the booke, but he that is most turned into it, that is most inspired gods work with the holie ghout, most in his heart alife altered and changed into that thing which he readeth : he that is daply leffe and leffe proude, leffe wrathfull, leffe conetous, and leffe defirous of world= lie and baine pleafuces: he that dayly (forfaking his old vicious life)increateth in bertue moze and moze. And to be flort, there is nothing that more maintemeth godlineffe of the muide, and bres ueth A.iiii.

The.ii.part of the Exhortation

Marthas. ueth away bigodineffe, then both the continual reading or heas Dobat oil: ring of Gods worde, if it be topned with a godly minde, and a commedia good affection, to knowe and followe good will. for without tur the ige a lingle eye, pure intent, and good mind, nothing is allowed for good word good before God. And on the other five nothing more darkeneth Chain and the glory of God, not bringeth in more blindnesse, and all kinds of bices, then both the ionorance of Gods worde.

> The fecond part of the fermon of the knowledge of holy scripture.

no as A the first part of this Sermon, which exhorteth to the knowledge ofholy Scripture was beclared wherefore the knowledge of the same is necessarie and profitable to all men, and that by the true knowledge and understanding of Scripture, the most necessarie pointes of our A dittie towards God and our neighbors are alto knowne. Downs concerning the fame matter, you hall heare what followeth. If we professe Christ, why be we not albamed to be ignorant in his doctrine? Secing that enery man is albamed to be ignorant in that learning which he professeth. That man is all amento be called a Philosopher, which readeth not the bookes of 10 hilosophie; and to be called a Labover, and Aftronomer, or Dinfition, that is ignorant in the bookes of Lawe, as ftronomie, and Philicke. How can any man then lay that be profelleth Chaift and his religion, if he will not applie himselfe (as farre forth as be can or may conveniently to read and heare, and to to know the bookes of Chailes Goinel and doctrine; Although other fciences be good; and to be learned pet no man can Denie, but this is the cheefe, and paffeth all other incomparably. no hat excuse shall we therfore make (at the last day before Christ) that delight to read of heare mens fantalies and inventions, more then his most holy Gowell? And willfindeng time to doe that which chiefly (about all things) we fould does and will rather reade other things then that, for the which we ought rather to leane reading of all other things. Let be therefore applie our fclues, as farre forth as we can have time and leadure, to bnow Gods word, by diligent hearing and reading thereof, as many as professe God, and have faith and trust in him. But they that 5 1314 baue

Coos Spord cr= ecticth all facuces.

### to boly scripture.

neas

nda

out

o for

reth

and

101=

185

me

hat

rof

our

al=

are

le D

18=

nat

ot

TO=

312

=01

ag

nd

gh ie,

at

at

20

at

er

to

ur

m

at

ue

have no good affection to Gods worde ( to coulour this their Clarect tanit) allebar commonly two bains and feyned excules. Some Gabing go about to excuse them by their owne frailnesse and fearfulnesse, from the faying that they bare not reade holie Scripture, leaft through of Goos their ignozance, they fould fall into any errout. Other pictend worde. that the Difficultie to buderstand it, and the bardnesse thereof is the scool to great, that it is meete to be read onely of Clarkes and learned men. Astouching the first: Ignozance of Gods worde, is the caufe of alt errour, as Chill himfelfe affirmed to the Saduces, Mathan faying that they erred, because they knowe not the Scripture, Dow fould they then eschew errour, that wil be still ignorant? And how fould they come out of ignorance, that will not reade not heare that thing which should give them knowledge? He that now bath most knowledge, was at the first ignorant, yet be forbare not to reade, for feare he (bould fall into error : but be diff gently read leaft be flouid remaine in ignorance, and through ignozance in erroz. And if you will not knowe the truth of God (athing most necessarie for you) least you fall into errour, by the fame reason you may then he ftill, and never go, least (if you go) you fall in the mire: not eate any good meat, least you take a furferte, not fowe your come, not labour in your occupation, not bee your marchandile, for feare you lole your feed, your labour, your flocke, and to by that reason, it should be best for you to live thely, and never to take in hand to doe any maner of good thing, least peraduenture fome enill thing may chance thereof. And if you be afrapd to fall into errour, by reading of holy Scripture: I hall them you how you may reade it without daunger of error. Reade it humbly with a meete and lowly heart, to the intent you may commode glorifie God, and not pour felfe, with the knowledge of it; and only and reade it not without darly praying to God, that he would direct without al pour reading to good effect : and take byon you to expounde it no holy large further, then you can plainly buderstand it. for (as faint Augu-berend. fline faith) the knowledge of holy feripture, is a great, large, and a high place, but the doore is very low, to that the high and arro= gant man can not runne in : but he must flow pe low and humble bimselfe, that shall enter into it. Declumption and arrogancie is the mother of al error: and humilitie endeth to feare no error. for humilitie will onely fearch to knowe the truth, it will fearch, and will bring together one place with an other, and where it cannot

### The.ii.part of the Exhortation

find out the meaning, it will prap, it wil afte of other that know, and will not prefumptuoully and rathly define any thing, which it knoweth not. Therfore the humble man may fearch any truth

boldly in the feripture, without any danger of errour. And if he be ignorant be ought the more to reade and to fearth holie ferins ture to bring him out of ignorance. I fap not nay, but a man map profer with onely hearing, but he may much more profer with both hearing a reading. This have I fapo, astouching the fears to reade, thosow ignorance of the person. And concerning the hardnesse of Scripture, be that is to weake that he is not able to brooke ffrong meate, yet he may fucke the fweete and tender milbe, and Deferre the reft, butill he ware ftronger, and come to more knowledge. for God recepueth the learned and bulearned. and cafteth away none, but is indifferent buto all. And the ferinture is full, as well of low balleys, plaine wayes, and cafe for every man to ble a to walke in: as also of high hilles and mounts tarnes, which few men can climbe buto. Ind who fo ever queth his mind to holy feriptures, with diligent fludy and burning des fire, it cannot be (fapeth faint Chryfoftome) that he fould be left without helpe. for either God almightie will fende him fome godly doctour, to teach him, as he bid to infruct Eunuchus, a no= ble man of Aethiope, & treasurer buto Queene Candace, who having affection to reade the feripture (although be buderfroode it not) pet for the delire that he had buto Gods worde. God fent his Apolle Whilip to declare buto him the true fense of the ferin ture that he read: oz elle, if we lacke a learned man to inftruct and teach be, pet God himfelfe from aboue, will give light buto our mindes, and teach be those thinges which are necessarie for be and wherein we be ignozant. And in another place Chryfoftome farth that mans humane and worldly wiscome or science, need Deth not to the understanding of Scripture, but the reuelation of the holy ghost, who insprett the true meaning buto them. that with bumilitie and diligence Do fearch therefore. De that ale

keth, hall haue, and be that fecketh hall find, and be that knocketh, shall haue the dooze open. If we reade once, twife, or thrife, and binderstand not, let be not ccase so, but stil continue reading.

Doore Mall be opened (ag faint Augustine fayth.) Although ma-

ny things in the Scripture be fpoken in obfcure myfteries, pet

there

Carinture in some places is calic,a in Come pla= ccs baro to be bnber= Camb.

God leas meth no man bn= taught, that bath good will to knam his mord.

Dow the knowledg of & fcrip: ture may be attemed betto.

Matth.7.

good it rule for the praping, asking of other, and so by still knocking (at the last) the bnberitä= hing of Cripture,

w,

ch

th

he

p:

ap

th

TE

he

ole

er

tò

D.

p=

02

n:

th

Cs

aft

ne

0=

ho

30

nt

n=

O

IC

14

ne

ec

m

Ť.

C=

e,

g,

10

1

et

there is nothing woken buder barke myfteries in one place, but the felfe fame thing in other places is fpoken more familiarly and plainly, to the capacitie both of learned and bulearned. And those things in the Scripture that be plaine to buderstand and necessary for Caluation, enery mans dutie is to learne them, to Roman print them in memoric, a effectuallie to exercile them. And as for from the the darke mysteries to be contented to be ignorant in them, butil knowledge fuch time as it that please God to open those things but o him. In of Gods b meane feafon if he lacke either avtneffe or oportunitie. God wil not impute it to his folly: but yet it behoueth not that fuch as be ant, hould fet affe reading, because some other be briant to tead: neverthelesse, for the hardnesse of such places, the reading of the whole ought not to be let apart. And briefly to conclude, (as faint potest pers Augustine farth) by the scripture, all men be amended , weake for would men be ftregthened, and ftrong men be comforted. So that fure rance to ly, none be enemies to the reading of Gods worde, but fuch as continue. either be so ignorant, that they know not bow wholsome athing it is: 02 elfe be fo ficke, that they hate the most comfortable medi cine that fould heale them: or fo broodly, that they would with

the people, still to continue in blindnesse and ignorance of God.

Thus we have briedy touched some part of the commodities the holy ferriture of Gods holy worde, which is one of Gods chiefe and principall is one of benefites, geuen and Declared to mankinde here in earth. Let be good chieft thanke God hartily, for this his great and special gift, beneficial fauoz, and fatherly prouidence. Let by be glad to remue this precions gift of our beauenly father. Let be heare, reade, a knowe thefe holy rules, Intunctions, and fratutes of our Chaiftian re- The right ligion, and byon that we have made profession to God at our reading. baptisme. Let be with feare and reverence lap bp (in the cheft of fruitfull our heartes) thefe necessaric and fruitfull lesons. Let be night shoping and hap mufe, and have meditation and contemplation in them. ferreture. Let be ruminate, and (as it were) chewe the cubbe, that we map Palso. have the I weete fewic, wirituall effect, marrowe, hony, kirnell, talle comfort, and confolation of them. Let be flap, quiet, and certifie our consciences, with the most infallible certaintie, truth and perpetuall affurance of them. Let be pray to God (the one a ly authour of these heavenly studies) that we may speake, thinke, beleeue, line a Depart hence, according to the wholfom doctrine, and berities of them. And by that meanes, in this world we shall

haue

have Gods defence, favour, and grace, with the buspeakable so lace of peace, and quietnesse of conscience, and after this miserable life, we shall entoy the endselse blisse and glory of heaven; which he grant be all that died for be all, Jesus Christ, to whom with the father and the holy ghost, be all honour and glory, both now and everlastingly. Amen.

CO

Bo

bs

m

an

fai

ma

all

of

wi

An

oft

the

ma

[pz

tti

the

an

cle

cui

tha

ma

gai

(er

gra

me

cat

nai

Par Chil

bg.

rig

fait

bni

tha

are

2. A fermon of the miserie of all mankind, and of his condemnation to death euerlasting, by his owne sinne, 2.

1. 10 The holy ghost, in writing the holy Scripture, is in nothing more diligent, then to pull downe mans baine glory and pride, which of al vices is most buis uerfally grafted in all mankinde, even from the first infection of our first father Adam. Ind therefore me reade in many places of Scripture, many notable leffons as gainst this olderooted vice, to teach by the most commendable bertue of humility, howe to knowe our felues, and to remember what we be of our felues. In the booke of Genefis, Almightie God giueth be all a title and name in our great grandfather 3= dam, which ought to warne be all to confider what wee bee. whereof we be, from whence we came, and whither we shall, faying thus, In the fweate of thy face thalt thou cate thy bread. till thou be turned againe into the ground, for out of it wast thou taken, in as much as thou art dust, into dust shalt thou be turned againe. Here (as it were in a glasse) we may learne to knowe our felues to be but ground, earth, and alles, and that to earth and aftes we fhall returne.

Also, the holy Patriarch Absaham did well remember this name and title, dust, earth, and alhes, appointed and assigned by God to all mankinde: and therefore he calleth himselfe by that name, when he maketh his earnest praier for Sodom and Gomore. And we reade that Judith, Ester, Job, Jeremie, with other holy men and women in the olde Testament, did bie sack-cloth, and to cast dust and ashes by on their heades, when they bewayled their sinfull living. They called and cried to God, for helpe and mercie, with such a ceremonie of sackcloth, dust, and ashes, that thereby they might declare to the whole world, what an humble and lowly estimation they had of themselves, a howe well they remembred their name and title asoresayde, their bile corrupt

Indi.4.& 9. Iob.13. Iere.6.& 25.

of the miserie of man.

100

corrupt fraile nature, buff, earth, and aftes. The booke of noise Donic also willing to pull bowne our promo fromackes, mouth bs biligently to remember our mortall and earthly generation, which we have all of him that was first made: and that all men. afwell kings as subjects, come into this booth, and go out of the fame in like fort: that is, as of our felucs full miferable, as wee may bayly fee. And almightie God commanded his Drophete Clay to make a 10 20clamation, and cric to the whole would: and Clay afking, what fall I crie : The Lord answered Trie, that Elm. a. all field is graffe, and that all the glosp therof, is but as the floure of the field, when the graffe is withered, the floure falleth a: way, when the wind of the Lord bloweth boon it. The people furely is graffe, the which byeth bp, and the floure fabeth away. Ind the holy Prophete Job, having in himfelfe great experience of the miferable and finfull eftate of man, boeth open the fame to the world in thefe words . Man (fayth he) that is borne of a wos lob. man, living but a foot time, is full of manifolde milerics, hee furingeth by like a floure, and fadeth againe, banifocth away as it were a hadow, and neucr continucth in one flate. And Doeft thou judge it meete (D Lord) to open thine eyes byon fuch a one, and to bring him to indocement with thec! noho can make him cleane, that is concepued of an bucleane feed, and all men of their entineffe, and natural proneneffe, be fo bniverfally genen to finne; that (as the Scripture farth) God repented that euer be made man. And by finne his indignation was to much pronoked a cont. gainst the world, that he drowned at the world with foes floud (ercept Roe himfelfe, and his litle houfholde.) It is not without great cause, that the scripture of God Doth so many times call all men here in this would by this word, earth, D thou earth, earth, carth farth Acremie beare the wood of the Lord. This our right name, calling, and title, earth, earth, paonounced by the Diophete, heweth what we be in deede, by whatforner other file, title, oz Dianitie, men do call bs. Thus he plainely named bs, who knoweth best, both what we be, and what we ought of right to be called. And thus he fetteth be foorth, weaking by his faithfull Apoftle Saint Paul, All men, Tewes and Gentiles, are buder finne, there is none righteous, no not one: there is none that bnderstandeth, there is none that feeketh after God, they are all gone out of the way, they are all buprofitable, there is none

#### The first part of the Sermon

fi

Œ

11

b

te

fo

n

tl

CI

b

fl

fi

Đ

G

t

ti

f

G

t

fi

le

ti

t

O

finne.

none that doeth good, no not one: their throte is an oven fevuls chie, with their tongues they have bled craft and decept, the porson of servents is buder their lippes, their mouth is full of curling and bitternelle, their fecte are Cwift to (bed blood, des struction and weetchednesse are in their waves, and the way of peace have they not knowne: there is no feare of God before their eyes. And in another place, Saint Baule wepteth thus, God hath wapped all nations in bubeleete, that hee might bane mercie on all. The Scripture fbutteth by all bider finne, that the promise by the farth of Jesus Christ, should be given buto them that believe. Saint Paule in many places painteth bs out in our colours, calling bs the children of the wrath of God, when we be borne: faring also that we cannot thinke a good thought of our felues, much leffe can we fay well, or doe well of our sclucs. And the wife man saveth in the booke of 10202 uerbes. The inft man falleth seven times a day. The most tried and appropued man Job, feared all his workes. Saint John the Baptist being fanctified in his mothers wombe, and prapsed be= fore he was borne, being called an Angell, and great before the Lord, filled even from his brith with the holy about the preparer of the way for our Saujour Chailt, and commended of our Sas wow Chiff, to be moze then a Drophete, a the greatest that cuer was borne of a woman: pet be plainly granteth that he had need to be washed of Chaist, he woodthily extolleth and glouisieth his Lord and mapfter Christ, and humbleth himselfe as bu woorthy to bubuckle his shooes, and queth all honour and gloup to God. So both Saint Daul both oft and euidently confeste himselfe. what he was of hunfelfe, cuer giving (as a most faithful servant) all prayle to his maylter and Sautour. So doth bleffed Saint John the Euanachit, in the name of himselfe, and of alother holy men (be they never to just) make this open confession: If we say we have no finne, we decepue our felnes, and the truth is not in bs : If we knowledge our finnes, God is faythfull and fust to forque our finnes, and to cleanfe be from all burighteoufneffe: If we fay we have not finned, we make him a lyer, and his word is not in vs. wherefore, the wife man in the booke called Eccles fialtes, maketh this true and general confession. There is not one inst man boon the earth that doeth good, and sinneth not. And Saint Dauid is albamed of his tinne, but not to confesse his

Rom to. Gala. 3. Ephc. 2.

Pros. 24.

Luke, z,

Marth.3.

a.lohnar.

Eccle.7.

Pial.gr.

of the miserie of man.

nuls

the

of

Des

dag

ore

us,

aht

ne,

ien

un=

ath'

tea

one

20=

ied

the

be=

the

rer

286

uer

ced

hig

thy

ob.

lfe.

nt)

int

olv

Cap

tin

to

Te:

le:

me

nd

his nc. finne. Dow oft, howe carnelly, and lamentably both he befire Gods great mercy for his great offences , and that God fould not enter into indgement with him? And againe, howe well weigheth this holy man his linnes, when he confesseth that they Paling be fo many in number, and fo hid, and hard to bnderftand, that it is in maner bupoffible to knowe, btter, or number them: no hereforc, he having a true, earneft, and beepe contemplation and con= Pal. 19. Aderation of his linnes, and pet not comming to the bottome of them, he maketh lupplication to God, to forgive him his priny, fc= crete, hid finnes: to the knowledge of the which he cannot attain buto. De weigheth rightly his finnes from the original roote and fpring head, percepuing inclinations, pronocations, frirings, flingings, buddes, branches, bregges, infections, tafts, feelings, and fentes of them to continue in him ftill. wherefore be farth, Marke, and beholde, I was concepted in finnes: De farth not Palst. finne, but in the plurali number, finnes, for as much as out of one (as fountaine) fpringeth all the reft. Dur Sauiour Chrift fayth, There is none good, but God: and that we can bo nothing Marke to. that is good without him, not no man can come to the father loke, 18. but by him. De commaundeth be all to fay, that we be bnprofi= Linke.17. table fernants, when we have done all that we can do. De preferreth the penitent Bublicane, before the proude, holy, and glo Like.12. ryous Bharifie. De calleth himfelfe a Phylition, but not to them that be whole, but to them that bee licke, and have neede of his falue for their forc. De teacheth bein our prapers, to reknow ledge our felues finners, and to afke righteonfneffe and beliue= rance from all euils, at our heavenly fathers hand. De declareth that the finnes of our owne bearts, do Defile our owne felues. De Marth 13. teacheth that an euill word or thought deferueth condemnation, Matth. 15. affyiming that we shall gitte an account for every tole worde. De farth, De came not to faue, but the fbecpe that were beterip loft, and calt away. Therefore few of the proude, full, learned, wife, perfect, and holy Pharifies, were faued by him, because they instified themselves by their counterfepte holynesse befoze men. noberefoze (good people ) let bs beware of such hypocrisie, baine glory, and inftifying of our felues.

The

### The second part of the Sermon of the miserie of man,

Dialmuch as the true knowledge of our felics is bery necessary, to come to the right knows Iledge of God, ve have heard in the last reading, howe humbly all godly men alwayes have thought of them felues, and fo to thinke and studge of themselues, are taught of God their Treator, by his holy worde. for of our felnes we be crabtrees, that can being foorth no apples. we bec of our felues of fuch earth, as can bring forth but weedes, nettles, brame bles, briers, cockle, and darnel. Dur fruits be declared in the fifth Chapter to the Galathians. We have neither farth, charitie, hope, patience, chaltitie, not any thing elfe that good is, but of God, and therefore these vertues be called there, the fruits of the holy ahoft, and not the fruites of man. Let be therefore acknowledge our felues before God (as we be in Deede) miferable a wretched finners. And let be earneftly repent, and humble our schoes hartily, a cric to God for mercie. Let be all confesse with mouth and heart, that we be full of imperfections: Let us knowe our owne workes, of what imperfection they be, and then we shall not kand foolishly and arrogantly in our owne conceptes, not chalenge any part of inflification by our merites or workes. for truely there be imperfections in our best workes: we do not love God so much as we are bound to do, with all our heart, minde, and power: we doe not feare God to much as we ought to doe: me do not pray to God, but with areat and many imperfections: we give, forgive, beleeve, live, and hope unperfectly: we speake, thinke, and do unperfectly: we fight against the deuill, the world, and the field buperfectly: Let be therfore not be afhamed to confeffe plainly our ftate of imperfection : pea, let be not be albamed to confesse imperfection, even in all our owne best workes. Let none of by be albamed to fay with holy Saint Deter, Tama fine full man. Let be fay with the holy Drophete Dauld, we have finned with our fathers, we have done amiffe and dealt wicked ly. Let us al make open confession with the prodical sonne to our father, and fay with him, we have finned against beauen, and before thee (D father) we are not worthic to be called the connes. Let be all say with holy Baruch, D Lord our God, to be is wor thily

f

t

1

11

t

8

fe

ti

n

h

L

u

Ct

11

ft

Ds

Gals.

Loke.6. Pfal. 106

Lukess.

Baruc. 3

### of the miserie of man.

thily alcribed shame and confusion, and to thee righteousnesse:

we have sinned, we have done wickedly, we have behaved our selves bugodly in all thy righteousnes. Let be all say with the holy prophet Daniel, D Lord, righteousnesse belongeth to thee, Dange, but o be belongeth confusion. We have sinned, we have beene naughtie, we have offended, we have fledde from thee, we have gone backe from all thy precepts a indgementes. So we learne of all good men in holy scriptures, to humble our selves, and to

eralt, ertolle, praife, magnifie, and glozifie Bod.

Hi]

nes

ms

ng.

ane

and

heit

nes

DILL

ame

ifth

itie,

it of

the

ome

zetues

nth

Out

hall

1101

F02

loue

nbe.

: 300

ons:

ake.

izld,

mcd

Let

fins

haue ked:

שונם כ

and

mes.

moz

thilp

Thus we have heard how entil we be of our felues, howe of our felues, and by our felues, be naue no goodnes, belpe nor faluation, but contrariwife, finne, Damnation, and Death cuerlas fting: which if we deepely weigh and confider, we shall the better buderstand the great mercie of God, and how our faluation commeth onely by Chaift. for in our felues (as of our felues ) we 1. Cor. 3. find nothing, whereby we may be definered from this miferable captimitie, into the which we were cast through the ennie of the denill by breaking of Gods commandement, in our first parent Adam. 10c are all become bucleane, but wee al are not able to Pfal.so. cleanse our selves, not to make one another of be cleane. we are by nature the children of Gods wrath, but wee are not able to Ephela, make our felues the children ainheritours of Gods glozie. Me are theeve that runne aftrap, but we can not of our owne power come againe to p theepfold, fo great is our imperfectio a weaker nes. In our felues therefore map we not glorie, which of our fel 1. Pet. 3. nes) are nothing but finful: neither may we reiopce in any works that we do, which all be so unperfect and bupure, of they are not able to fland before the righteous indgement feat of God, as the holy prophet Daniel faith, Enter not into judgement with thy Plal. 148, 2. fernant (D'Lorde:) for no man that liveth thall be found righteous in thy fight. To God therefore must we fice, or else wall we never finde peace reft, a quietnes of conscience in our harts. For 2. Cor.I. he is the father of prercies and God of all confolation. He is the Lord, with whome is plenteous redemption : Dee is the God Plai. 130. which of his owns mercie faueth vs. a setteth out his charitie a etceding four towards be, in that of his owne voluntarie goods nes, when we mere periffed, he faued is, a promoco an everlas thing kingdom for by. And at these beauenly treasures are given bs, not for our owne deferts, merits, or good deeds, (which of

CHE

Tobn.t.

John.I.

Mat.I.

### The second part of the Sermon

our felnes we have none) but of his meere mercy freely. And for mhole fake! Truely for Jelus Chriftes fake, that pure a broefiled lambe of Bod. He is that Dearely belooned fonne, for tohofe fake God is fully pacified fatiffied, and fet at one with man. Dee is the Lambe of God, which taketh away the fins of the world. 1. Pet-2. of whome onely it may be truely fpoken, that he did all thinges mel and in his mouth was founde no craft noz subtiltie. Pone but he alone map fap, The prince of the worlde came, and in mee he bath nothing. And he alone may allo fay, which of you fall reprooue me of any fault? De is the bigh and euerlafting Drieft, which bath offered himfelfe once for all boon the altar of p croffe, John.8. and with that one oblation hath made perfect for evermore them Heb.8. that are lanctified. De is the alone mediatour betwene God and man, which paide our ranfome to God with his owne bloode, & with that bath be cleanfed be all from finne. De is the Whifitio

which healeth all our difeafes. De is that Sautour which faueth his people from all their finnes: To be thout, he is that flowing and most plenteous fountaine, of whose fuinelle all we have receined. for in him alone are all the treasures of the wifedom and knowledge of God hidden. And in him, and by him, have wee from God the father all good thinges, pertaining either to the body or to the foule. D how much are we bound to this our heauenly father for his great mercies, which he hath fo plenteoufly Declared buto be in Chaift Telu our Lord and Saufour pobat thankes worthie and lufficient can we give to bim ? Let be all with one accorde burft out with toyfull boyce, ever prailing and magnifying this Lord of mercie, for his tender kindnes thewed unto be in his dearly beloued sonne Jesus Christ our Lord.

Ditherto have we heard what we are of our felues: bery finful, weetched, and danmable. Againe, we have heard how that of our felues, and by our felues, we are not able either to thinke a good thought, or worke a good deed, to that we can find in our felues no hope of faluation, but rather what fo euer maketh bus to our destruction. Againe, we have heard the tender kindnesse and great mercy of Bod the father towardes bs, and how beneficial be is to bs for Christs fake, without our merits or deferts, euen of his owne meere mercie and tender goodnes. Aoto, how thefe erceeding great mercies of God, fet abroad in Chrift Jefu for be, be obteined, and how we be delinered from the captinitie

of

of the miserie of man.

for

eft:

ose

elD.

ges

one

nee

all

eit,

ffe,

em

one

e, Æ

eth

res

und

the leas

uffp

bat

all

din

ped

fin:

hat

nke

our bn=

elle

11100

cts,

ada

esu

itie

of

of sin, death, a hel, it shall more at large (with Gods helpe) be declared in p nert Sermon. In the meane season, yea, a at al times let be learne to knowe our selves, our frailtie a weaknes, without any craking or boasting of our owne good deeds a merites. Let be also knowledge the exceding mercy of God towards be, a confesse, that as of our selves commeth all evill and damnatio: so likewise of him cometh all goodnes a salvation, as God him selse saith by the Prophet Osee, O Israel, thy destruction completes saith by selse, but in me only is thy help a comfort. If we thus humbly submit our selves in the sight of God, we may be sure p in the time of his distation, he will lift be by but of the kingdome of his dearly beloved some Christ Jesu our Lord: To whom, with the father, and the holy Ghost, be all honor and glory for ever.

Amen.

3. A Sermon of the Saluation of mankinde, by onely Christ our saujour, from sinne and death everlasting. 3

Grause all men bee sinners and offenders against God, and breakers of his law a commandements, therefore can no man by his owne acts, works, and deeds (seeme they never so good) be instified, a made righteous before God: but everie man of necessitie

is constrayned to seeke for an other righteousnes or institution, to be received at Gods owne hands, that is to say, the forgine nes of his sinnes and trespasses, in such things as he hath offereded. And this instification or righteousnes, which we so receive of Gods mercie a Christes merits, embraced by faith, is taken, accepted and allowed of God, for our perfect and full instification. For the more full binderstanding hereof, it is our parts and duties ever to remember the great mercie of God, howe that (all the worlde being wrapped in sinne by breaking of the law) God sent his onely some our Sautour Christ into this world, to fulfill the law for bs, and by thedding of his most pretious blood, to make a sacrifice and satisfaction, of (as it may bee called) amendes to his father for our sinnes, to alswage his wrath and indignation concepued against by for the same.

25 2

IIE

### The first part of the Sermon

The effieacie of Christes paffion &

In fo much & infants, being baptifed & dring in their infance. are by this facrifice mathed fro their fins, brought to Bods fauour, a made his children, a inheritours of his kingdome of beas oblation. uen. And they which in act or deed do sinne after their baptiline, whe they turne again to God unfainedly, they are likmife walls ed by this factifice from their fins, in fuch fort, that their remais neth not any (pot of fin, that that be imputed to their damnation. This is that inflification or righteoutnes which S. Daul freaketh off, when he faith, Ao man is instifted by the works of plaw but freely by faith in Telus Christ. And againe be faith, we be-

Galaz.

leve in Jelu Christ, we be instified freely by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law, because that no man shal be infified by the works of the law. And although this inflification be free buto bg, yet it cometh not so freely buto bg, there is no

ransome paid therefore at al. But here may mang reason be alto Obiectio. nied reasoning after this fathion. If a ransome be paid for our redemption, the is it not given by freely. for a prisoner that pais ed his ransome, is not let go freely, for if he go freely, then he go= eth without ransome: for what is it els to go freely, then to be let

Answere at libertie without paying of raunsome? This reason is satisfied by the great wifedom of God in this mysterie of our redemptio. who hath so tempered his justice a mercie together, & he would neither by his inflice condene by buto the everlasting captivitie of the deuillatis vision of bel, remediles for ever without mers cie-noz by his mercie deliner bs clearely, without inflice or pais ment of a full raunsome: but with his endlesse mercie he topned. his most byzight and equall instice. His great mercy be shewed buto be in delivering be fro our former captivitie, without res quiring of any ransome to be paide, or amends to be made upon our parts, which thing by be had ben impossible to be done. and where as it lap not in vs p to do, he provided a ranforme for vs.p was, i most pretious body a blood of his owne most deare a best beloued fon Jefu Chrift, who befids this ranfome, fulfilled y law for by perfectly. And to piultice of God a his mercy did inbrace together, a fulfilled p unftery of our redeptio. And of this justice a mercy of God knit together, fpeaketh S. Daulin & third chap. to p Romans, al have offended, a have need of p glozy of god, but are infified freely by his grace, by redemption which is in Tell

Chrift, who God hath fent forth to be for a recociler a peace mas

Rom. ?.

ker,

#### of Saluation,

13

1:

ia

L

n

a

Û

t

6

13

t

D.

0

1

4

ber, through faith in his bloode, to the we his righteoutnes. And in the tenth Chap. Chaift is the ende of the lawe buto righteouf Romito nes, to everie man that beleeveth. And in the eight Chapter, That which was impossible by the lawe, in as much as it was Rom.8. weake by the flelb, god fending his owne fon, in the limilitude of finfull fleft, by fin damned fin in the fleft, that the righteoutheffe of the law might be fulfilled in bs, which walke not after offelb, but after the spirite. In these foresaide places, the Apostle toucheth wecially three things, which must go together in our tusti threthings fication. Apon Gods part, bis great mercie a grace: bpo Chaifes muft go part, inflice, that is, the fatiffaction of Gods inflice, or the price of together our redemption by the offering of his bodie, and fbedding of his diffication, blood, with fulfilling of the law perfectly and throughly, and byo our part true a lively faith in the merites of Jelus Christ, which pet is not ours, but by Gods working in bs: fo that in our infification, is not onely Gods mercy a grace, but also his infice, which the Apostle calleth the tustice of God, and it consisteth in paying our ransome, a fulfilling of the law: a so the grace of God both not thut out the inflice of God in our inflification, but onely thutteth out the inflice of man , that is to fave, the inflice of our workes, as to be merits of Deferning our infification. And therefore S. Daui Declareth here nothing bppon the behalfe of man, concerning his infification, but onely a true and lively faith, which nevertheles is the gift of God, and not mans only worke, without God: And pet that faith doth not thut out repentance, bope, loue, bread, and the feare of God, to be toyned with faith in Howith euery man that is iustified, but it shutteth them out from the of to be vafice or inftifping. So that althoughthep be all prefent together derftande, in him that is instified, vet they instific not all together: 202 fifeth the faith also doeth not thut out the inflice of our good workes, without necessarily to be done afterwards of dutie towards God (for we worker. are most bounden to ferue God, in doing good deeds, commaun ded by him in his holy scripture, all the dayes of our life:) But it excludetly them, fo that we may not doe them to this intent, to be made good by doing of them. for al the good works that we can Do, be buperfect, and therefore not able to Deferue our inftificatis on: but our inftification docth come freely by the meere mercie of God, and of to great and free mercie, that where as all the woulde was not able of their felies to pay anie parte towardes their 26

### The seconde part of the Sermon

their ransome, it pleased our beauenly father of his infinite mers cy, without any our defert or deferuing, to prepare for by most precious iewels of Christs body and blood, whereby our rauns fome might be fully paide, the lawe fulfilled, and his juffice fully latisfied. So that Chailt is nowe the righteousnes of all the that truely do beleeve in him. He for them paide their ransome by his death. De for them fulfilled the lawe in his life. So that now in bim, and by him, every true Christian man may be called a fulfiller of the law, for as much as that which their infirmitie lacked, Christes instice bath supplyed.

### The Seconde part of the Sermon of Saluation.

E have hearde of inhome all men ought to feeke their instification and righteousnes, and howe also this righteousnes commeth buto men by Chistes Death and merites : pe hearde also howe that three thinges are required to the obtaining of our righteoufnes, that is, Bods mercie, Chiffs iuftice, and a true and a lively faith, out of the which faith fringeth good workes. Ilo before was des clared at large, that no man can be inftified by his owne good morkes, that no man fulfilleth the lawe, according to the ful res quest of the law.

ft

£

u

m

fe

pa

at

m

b

ba

of

mile

And S. Paul in his Epiffle to the Galathians proqueth the Gal,2.

fame , faying thus, If there had ben any law giuen which could have justified, verily righteousnes should have ben by the lawe. Ind againe be faith . If righteousnes be by the law, then Chift died in baine. And againe be faith, Hou that are instified by the lam, are fallen away fro grace. And furthermoze be writeth to the Ephelias on this wife, Brarace are pelaued through faith, and that not of your felues, for it is the gift of God, and not of morks, leaft any man (bould glorie. And to be short, the sime of al Pauls disputation is this: that if iustice come of works, then it commeth not of grace: and if it come of grace, then it commeth not of workes. And to this ende tendeth al the prophets, as S. Deterlaith in the tenth of the Acts, Of Chailt all the Brophetes (faith 5.10 eter) Do witnes, that through his name, all they that beleene in him, that receive & remission of sinnes. And after this

AA. 10.

Ephel.s.

### of Saluation.

Es.

ıſŧ ns

ule

bê

ne

at

ed

tie

Re

lfo

29

ee

af

ut

es.

da

res

the

dit

oe.

ift

the

to

th.

of

of

en

th

5.

es

nat

bis

ice

mile to be inftified onely by this true and lively faith in Chrifte, Faith one (peaketh al the old ancient Authours, both Greekes and Las eth, is the tines. Df whome I will frecially rehearfe three, Hilary, Bafil, doctrine Ambrofe. S. Hilary faith thefe mordes plainelp in the ir. Canon of olde doctours. boon Mathew faith only iuftifieth. Ind S. Bafil a Brecke authour writeth thus, This is a perfect a a whole reiopcing in god toben a man aduanceth not himfelfe for his owne righteoufnes, but knowledgeth himselfe to lacke true inflice a righteousnes, a to be inftificd by the onely faith in Chaift. And Daul (fatth bee) Phila. both glorie in the contempt of his owne right eousnes, and that he looketh for the righteousnes of God, by faith.

Thele be the berie words of Saint Balil. And S. Ambrofc. a Latine Authour, fatth these wordes, This is the ordinance of God, that they which beleeve in Christ, shoulde be saved without workes, by faith onely, freely receiving remission of their finnes. Confider diligently these mordes, without workes by faith onely, freely we receive remission of our sinnes. What can be woken more plainely, then to fay, That freely without workes by faith onely, we obteine remission of our fins? Thele, and other like fentences, that we be justified by faith onely, free: ip, and without workes, we do read oft times in the most best a auncient writers. As belide Hilarie, Bafil, and S. Ambrole bes fore reheatled, we read the same in Origen, Saint Chrysostome, S. Cyprian, S. Augustine, Prosper, Occumenius, Procius, Bernardus, Anselme, and many other Authours, Greek, and Latine. Aes uerthelesse, this sentence, that me be instified by faith onely, is not to meant of them, that the faide tultifying faith is alone in man, without true repentance, hope, charitie, dreade, and the feare of God, at any time and feafon. Aor when they fay, That we be julified freely, they meane not that we should or might af lone, how terwarde be idle, and that nothing shoulde bee required on our partes afterwarde: Reither they meane not so to be instified without our good workes, that we shoulde do no good workes at all, like as that be more expressed at large bereafter. But this laying, That we be instified by faith onely, freely and without workes, is spoken for to take awaye clearely all merite of our woorkes, as being bnable to deserve our instification at Gods bandes, and thereby most plainely to expresse the weakenesse of man, and the goodnesse of God, the great infirmitie of our

23 4

Faith ait is to be vnderstäd.

felues.

### The seconde part of the Sermon

felues, a the might and power of God, the imperfectnes of our

owne woorkes, and the most aboundant grace of our Saujour Chailt, and therefore wholy to afcribe the merite and deferuing of our instification buto Christ only, and his most pretious blood Theprofit Medding. This faith the holy Scripture teacheth, this is the of the do- Aronge Rocke and foundation of Christian Religion, this docfaith only trine all olde and anneient authours of Chriftes Church doe ans proue, this bottrine advanceth and letteth foorth the true alos tie of Chailt, and beateth downe the baine glorie of man, this wholoeuer denveth, is not to be counted for a christian man, nor for a fetter forth of Chrifts glorie, but for an aduerfarie to Chrift What thei and his Golpell, and for a letter foorth of mens baine glorie. and

be that un although this Doctrin be neuer fo true (asit is most true in Deed) dottrin of that we be inftified freely without all merite of our owne good Faith only workes (as Saint Daul Doth expresse it) and freely by this line

inflifieth. by and perfect faith in Chaift onely (as the auncient authours ble to (peake it) pet this true doctrine muft be allo truly buderfrand and most plainely Declared, least carnall men should take briust ly occasion thereby to live carnally, after the appetite and will of A declara- the mozide, the field and the deuill. And because no man shoulde erre by miliabing of this doctrine, I hall plainely and footly to beclare the right bnderstanding of the same, that no man shall fully thinke that he may thereby take any occasion of carnall its bertie, to folowe the defires of the field, or that thereby any kinde of fin shalbe comitted, or any bigodly living the more bled.

tió of this doctrine of Faith without works iuftiffeth.

firft, pou fhal bnderftand, that in our iustification by Chrift. it is not al one thing, the office of God buto man, and the office of man buto Bod. Juftification is not the office of man, but of Bod. orman cannot make himfelfe righteous by his owne woorkes, neither in part, noz in the whole, for that were the greateft arros gancie and prefumption of man, Antichift could fet by against God, to affirme a man might by his owne works, take away & Juftificati- purge bis owne ling, a fo inftifie himfelfe. But inftification is b office of god only, a is not a thing which we render buto him, but which we receive of him: not which we give to him, but which me take of bini, by his free mercie, a by b only merits of his most Dearely beloued fonne, our onely redeemer, fautour, and juftifier Telus Chaift: fo that the true bnderstanding of this doctrine, mee bee instified freely by faith, without woozkes, or that

on is the office of God only. IE

g Ds

ne

Co

0=

00 S

02 ft

O

1)

D

20 ce

D

10

of e

II

13 30

D.

ž,

1: ft

b

ſŧ C

Ê

mee bee inflified by faith in Chiff onely : is not, that this out owne acte, to beleeve in Christ, or this our faith in Christ mbich is within bs. doeth justifie bs, and deserve our justification buto be for that were to count our felues to be justified by some acte or vertue that is within our selves ) but the true buderstanding and meaning therof is, that although we heare Gods word, and beleeue it, although we have faith, hope, charitie, repentance, dread, and feare of God within be, and doe never fo many good morkes thereunto : yet we must renounce the merite of all our faide bertues, of faith, hope, charitie, and all other bertues and good deedes, which we either have done, shall doe, or can doe, as thinges that be farre to weake and infufficient, and bowers fect, to descrue remission of our sing, and our instification, and therefore we must trust onely in Gods mercie, and that facrifice which our high prieft and Saujour Christ Telus the fon of God once offered toz by byon the croffe, to obteine therby Godsgrace, and remission, as well of our original sinne in Baptifine, as of all actual finne committed by be after our Baptisme, if me truely repent, and turne unfeinedly to him againe. So that as S. John Baptift, although he were never to bertuous and godly a man, yet in this matter of forgining of finne, be did put the people from him, and appointed them buto Chrift, laying thus buto them, Beholde, ponder is the lambe of God, which faketh away the sinnes of the worlde : even so, as great and as godly a vertue as the lively faith is yet it putteth bs from it felfe, and remitteth oz appointeth by buto Chaift, for to baue onely by him remission of our sinnes, or instification . So lohn. 1. that our faith in Chail (as it were) faith buto by thus, It is not I that take awaie pour linnes , but it is Chuft onelp, and to bim onely I fend you for that purpole, forfaking therein all your good bertues, wordes, thoughtes, and workes, and onelp putting pour truft in Chaft.

### The third part of the Sermon

Thath bene manifeltly declared buto pou , that no man can fulfill the laws of God, and therfore by the necessarily, that some other thing should be required

### The third part of the Sermon

3

al

ti

Cp

ag

th

bi

bo

Ce

fü

Di

n

fu

of Of

Ot

al

BI

f

lit

fa Di

th

be

m

00

fa

m

th

for our faluation then the lawe: and that is, a true and a lively faith in Christe: bringing foorth good workes, and a life according to Gods commandements. And also you heard the auncient authours mindes of this laying, faith in Christ onely instificth man, so plainely declared, that you see, that the berie true meaning of this proposition or saying, noe be instified by faith in Christ onely, (according to the meaning of the olde auncient authours) is this: noee put our faith in Christe, that we be instified by him onely, that we be instified by Gods free mercy, and the merites of our Sauiour Christ onely, and by no bertue or good workes of our owne, that is in bs, or that we can be able to have or to doe, for to deserve the same: Christe himselfe

onely being the cause meritozious thereof.

Dere you perceive many words to be bled to avoide contention in wordes with them that delight to braule about wordes, and also to shew the true meaning to anoide enil taking and mis buderstanding, and pet peraduenture all will not ferue with them that be contentious: but contenders will ever forge matters of contention, even when they have none occasion thereto. Aotwithstanding, such be the lesse to be passed byon, so that the rest may profite, which will be more desirous to know the truth. then ( when it is plaine prough ) to contende about it and with confentious and captious cauillation, to obscure and barken it. Trueth it is, that our owne workes doe not instifie bs, to weake properly of our instification, (that is to say)our worker Doe not merit or deferue remission of oursinnes, and make be of buiuft, tuft before God: but God of his obone mercie, through the onely merites and deferuinges of his some Tesus Christe, doth iuftifie bg. Deuertheleffe, because faith both directly fend bs to Christ for remission of our sinnes, and that by faith given bs of God, we imbrace the promile of Gods mercie, a of the remiffion of our fins, (which thing none other of our bertues or works properly doth ) therfore Scripture bleth to lap, that faith without workes both instifie. And for as much that it is all one sentence in effect, to fay, faith without workes, and onely faith both fullifie be, therefore the olde ancient fathers of the Church from time to time, haue betered our inftification with this speech, Onely faith iustifieth by : meaning none other thing then 5 Daul meant, when he law, faith without workes iustifieth bs. Alnd

uelo

CO25

nct

ills

erie

dec

uns

me

lets

er:

1 be

elfe

nfi

es,

nic

rith

ata

to.

the

th, ith

ren

to

eg

bg

gh te,

nd

bg

TE

kg

the

ns

th

111

b.

5

S.

dn

and because all this brought to passe through the onely merites and deferuinges of our faujour Chrift, and not through our merites, or through the merite of any vertue that we have within bs, or of any worke that commeth from bs: therefore in that res wect of merite and deferuing, we forfake (as it were ) altogether againe, faith, workes, and all other bertues. for our owne imperfection is to greate, through the corruption of original finnes that al is buverfect that is within bs faith charity, hope dread, thoughtes, words, and workes, and therefore not apt to merite & discerne any part of our instificatio for bs. And this forme of speking ble we, in the humbling of our felues to God, and to give al the glory to our faniour Christ, which is best worthy to have it.

Dere you have heard the office of God in our instification, and how we receive it of him freely, by his mercie, without our des ferts , through true and linely faith. Row you shall beare the of They that fice a duety of a Christian ma bnto God, what we oughton our preach part to render buto God againe, for his great mercy and good faith only nes. Our office is, not to paffe y time of this preient life bufruit doe not fully, and idlely, after that we are baptiled or inftified, not caring reach carhow few good workes we doe, to the glorie of God, and profite nall liberof our neiabboures : much leffe is it our office, after that we bee we fould once made Chrifts meberg to line contrarie to the fame, making doe no our felues members of the binell, walking after his inticements, good and after the fuggestions of the world and the field, whereby we know that we doe ferue the worlde and the divell, and not God. for that faith which bringeth foorth ( without repentance ) et The dither entil workes, or no good workes, is not a right, pure, and wels have lively faith, but a dead, diveliche, counterfaite and feigned faith, bue faith, as Saint Daul and Saint James call it. for euen the faith. dinels knowe and beleeve that Christe was borne of a birgin. that he faited fourty daies and fourty nights without meat and drinke, that he wrought all kinde of myracles, declaring himfelfer berie God : they beleeve also, that Chaift for our lakes luffered most vaineful death, to redeeme from everlasting death a that be tole againe from death the third day: they beleeve that hee aftended into beauen, and that bee litteth on the right bande of the father, and at the last ende of this worlde shall come againe, and indge both the quicke and the deade. These articles of our faith the Diucils beleeve, and so they beleeve all thinges that

be

### The third part of the Sermon

What is the true & iustifivng faith.

be maitten in the newe and olde Testament to be true : and vet for all this faith, they bee but divells, remaining still in their Damnable estate, lacking the berie true Christian faith. for the right and true Chaistian faith is , not onely to beleeve that holy Scripture, and althe foreland articles of our faith are true, but also to have a fure trust and confidence in Gods mercifull promiles, to be faued from everlasting damnation by Christ: where of both follow a louing heart to obey his commandements. And this true Christian faith, neither any divell bath, nor vet any man, which in the outward profession of his mouth, and in his outward recepting of the facramets, in comming to the Church, and in all other outward appearances, feemeth to be a Christie an man, and yet in his living and deedes themeth the contrary. They that for how can a man baue this true faith, this fure trust and concontinue fidence in Bod, that by the merites of Chaifte, his finnes be uing baue forginen, and be reconciled to the fauour of Bod, and to be par-

taker of the kingdome of heaven by Chaift, whe he liveth bugod: not true faith.

ly and denieth Chrift in his deedes? Surely no fuch bingedly man can baue this faith and truft in God . for as they knowe Thrift to be the onely faujour of the worlde : fo they knowe also that wicked men thall not enior the kingdome of God. They

Pfal.15.

knowe that God hateth unrighteousnes, that he will destroy all those p speake untruely, that those which have done good works (which cannot be done without a lively faith in Chaift ) mall com foorth into the refurrection of life, and those that have done enil, hall come but othe refurrection of judgement: bery well they know alfo, that to them that be contentious, and to them that will not be obedient buto the trueth, but will obey burighteous nes , fhall come indignation , weath , and affliction , ac. Therefore to conclude, considering the infinite benifites of Bod. hemed and given buto be, mercifully without our defertes, who hath

not onely created by of nothing , and from a peece of bile clay, of his infinite goodnes, bath exalted bs (as touching our foule) bri to his owne fimilitude and likenes: but also whereas we were condemned to bel and death enerlasting, bath given his owne naturall fonne, being God eternall, immortall, and equal brito himfelfe, in power and glozie, to be incarnated, and to take our

mortall nature boon him, with the infirmities of the fame, and in the same nature to Cuffer most shamefull and painefull death

fo2

fo2

life

bn

em

an mi

me

per bg

mi

COL

alo

rp,

ani

ben tot

mu

to

mu ina

bat

on:

out

in s

200

this

1

The first padtiat to Sermen

for our offences, to the intent to instifie bs, and to restore by to life everlasting: so making by also his deare children, brethren but o his onely some our Samour Christ, and inheritours for

ener with him of his eternall kingdome of heaven ...

et

etr

the

olo

ut

200

ets!

nd

np

nig

ch.

at-

tp.

one

be

are

:00

dlp

we

Ico

gep

all

ks

mo

uil.

jey

us:

res

w

ath

,of

one

ere

ome

nto

nuc

und

ath

for

Thele areat and merciful benifites of God (if they be wel confidered) doe neither minister buto be occasion to be tole, a to line without doing any good works, neither ret firreth by by by any meanes to doe entil thinges : but contrariewife, if we be not defe perate persons, and our heartes harder then stones, they mooue bs to render our felues buto God wholly with alour wil, harts, might, and power, to ferue bim in all good deedes, obeying his commandementes during our lines, to feeke in all thinges his glorie and honour, not our fenfuall pleafures and baine glory, euermoze dreading willingly to offend fuch a mercifull God, and louing redeemer, in mord, thought or deede . And the faid benefites of God deepely confidered, moone be for his fake alfo to be ever readie to give our felues to our neighbours and as much as lieth in bs, to ftudie with al our indenour to bo good to fuery man. Thefe be the frutes of true faith, to dee good as much as lieth in bs to every man, and above all thinges, and in all thinges to advance the glozy of God of whome onely we have our fanctification, instification, faluation, and redempt is on : to whom be ever glory, maile, and homour, worlde with out ende. Amen. had no dans im alood sin untited of then to

## 4. A Short declaration of the true, lively, some and Christian faith. 3

mon togram in its of an analysis in the contract of the configuration of the configuration of the contract of

De fyrst comming buto God (good Christian peo Falch.
ple ) is through faith, whereby (as it is declared in the last Sermon) were be instified before God.

And lest any man should be determed, for lacke of right understanding thereof , it is diligently to be noted, that faith is taken in the Scripture two maner of wates. There is one faith, which Adead

in Scripture is called a dead faith, which bringeth foorth no faith, good workes, but is idle, barraine, and vifruitefull. Ind this faith, by the holy Apolite Saint James, is compared to the faith

### The third part of the Sermon

ft

b

El

m

m

De

be

m

CO

all

rp an

bei to

mu

to

mu

in a

bat

on:

out

ins

TOOD this

What is the true & iustifiyng faith.

be maitten in the newe and olde Testament to be true : and pet for all this faith, they bee but divells, remaining still in their Damnable eftate, lacking the berie true Christian faith. for the right and true Chistian faith is, not onely to beleeve that holy Scripture, and al the foresand articles of our faith are true, but also to have a fure trust and confidence in Gods mercifull promiles, to be faued from everlatting damnation by Chrift: wherof doth follow a louing heart to obey his commandements. And this true Christian faith, neither any divell bath, nor yet any man, which in the outward profession of his mouth, and in his outward recepting of the facramets, in comming to the Church, and in all other outward appearances, feemeth to be a Chaiftis an man, and yet in his living and deedes theweth the contrary. They that for how can a man baue this true faith, this fure trust and confidence in God, that by the merites of Christe, his sinnes be uing baue forgiuen, and be reconciled to the fauour of God, and to be partaker of the kingdome of heaven by Chaift, whe he liveth bugod: ly, and denieth Christ in his deedes? Surely no fuch bingedly man can have this faith and truft in God . for as they knowe Chailt to be the onely faulour of the worlde: fo they knowe also that wicked men chall not enior the kingdome of God. They

continue not true faith.

Pfal.15.

knowe that God bateth buriabteousnes, that he will destroy all those & speake butruely, that those which have done good works (which cannot be done without a lively faith in Chall ) chall com foorth into the refurrection of life, and those that have done enil, mall come but o the refurrection of indgement : bery well they know also, that to them that be contentious, and to them that will not be obedient buto the trueth, but will obey burighteous nes, shall come indignation, wrath, and affliction, ac. Therefore to conclude, confidering the infinite benifites of God, thewed and given buto bs, mercifully without our defertes, who hath not onely created by of nothing, and from a peece of bile clap, of his infinite goodnes, bath exalted bs (as touching our foule) bri to his owne fimilitude and likenes: but also whereas we were condemned to bel and death enerlasting, bath given his owne naturall fonne, being God eternall, immortall, and equal buto himselfe, in power and glozie, to be incarnated, and to take our moztall nature byon him, with the infirmities of the fame, and in the same nature to suffer most shamefull and painefull death toz nomers of faith a had all?

for our offences, to the intent to inflifie be, and to reflore be to life euerlasting : so making be also his deare children , brethen buto his onely forme our Saujour Chaift, and inheritours for

ener with him of his eternall kingdome of heaven .

Thele great and merciful benifites of God (if they be wel confidered doe neither minister buto be occasion to be idle . a to line without doing any good works, neither ret firreth by by any meanes to doe entil thinges : but contrariewife, if we be not defperate persons, and our heartes harder then stones, they moone bs to render our felues buto God wholly with alour wil, barts. might, and power, to ferue him in all good deedes, obeying his commandementes during our lines, to feeke in all thinges his glorie and honour, not our fenfuall pleasures and baine gloty, euermoze dreading willingly to offend fuch a mercifull God, and louing redeemer, in word, thought, or deede ... And the faid benefites of God deepely confidered, moone be for his fake also to be ever readie to give our felnes to our neighbours, and as much as lieth in by, to ftudie with al our indenour to do good to every man. These be the frutes of true faith, to dee good as much as lieth in bs to every man, and above all thinges, and in all thinges to advance the glozy of God, of whome onely we have our fanctification, inflification, faluation, and redempt is on : to whom be cuer glory, praise, and honour, worlde without ende. Amen. had a de la minimatora sui mattiert ai il an co-

#### 4 A Short declaration of the true, lively, and Christian faith. 32 & 319th thunk routin faces) ide buirnifelus and besit, and morece

the forether is a large the man the ball of the ball of the

et

ir

he

lp

ut

00

CJ

nD

np

is ch,

ti=

tv.

ons

be

ar,

=00

Dlp

me

illo

hep

all

185

om

uil,

hev hat

ous

eres

ews

ath

v,of

on

oere

one

onto

out

and

eath

for

Por y De fraft comming buto God (good Christian peo Falth. ple) is through faith, whereby (as it is declared in the laft Sermon ) wee be inftified before Bod. And left any man fould be deceined, for lacke of right understanding thereof 1 it is diligently to be noted, that faith is taken in the Scripture two maner of wates . There is one faith, which Adead!

n Scripture is called a dead faith, which bringeth foorth no faith. good workes, but is idle, barraine, and bifruitefull . Ind his faith, by the holy Avoltle Saint James, is compared to the

faith

### The first part of the Sermon

laft

Dot

ani

tim

mil

not

A CO

bpc

and

**p20** 

hea

1102

out

and

goo

four

tor

they

com

mer

mer

Df1

line

that

blea

ther

it fe

but!

by g

feth

nou

DDO

faiti

dan

wine

tayti

Sames.1.

Time

faith of Dinels, which beleene God to bee true and inft, and tremble for feare, pet they boe nothing wel, but al cuill. Ind fuch a maner of faith haue the wicked and naughty Christian people, which confesse God, (as S. Daul faith) in their mouth, but Denp him in their deedes, being abhominable, and without the right faith, and to all good workes reproueable . And this faith is a persmasion and beleefe in mans heart, whereby he knoweth that there is a God, and agreeth bnto all trueth of Gods moft boly morde, conteined in the holy Scripture. So that it confifteth onely in beleeuing in the worde of God, that it is true. And this is not properly called faith. But as be that readeth Cealars Co mentaries, beleeving the same to be true, bath thereby a know ledge of Cealars life, and notable actes, because he beleeueth the biltory of Cealar: pet it is not properly faide that hee beleeneth in Cealar, of whome he looketh for no helpe nor benifte . Euen To, he that beleeueth that al that is Cpoken of God in the 28 the is true, and pet lineth to bigodly, that he can not looke to intoy the promites and benifites of God: although it may be faide, that fuch a man hath a faith and beleefe to the wordes of God, pet it is not properly faid that he beleeueth in God, oz hath fuch a faith and truft in God, wherby he may furely looke for grace, mercy, and everlatting life at Gods hand, but rather for indignation and punishment, according to the merites of his wicked life. for as it is written in a booke, intituled to be of Didymus Alexandrius, foralmuch as faith without workes is dead, it is not now faith as a dead man , is not a man . This dead faith therefore is not the fuce and fubitantial faith, which faueth finners. In other faith there is in scripture, which is not ( as the foresaide faith) idle, bufruitefull, and dead, but worketh by charity (as S. Daul Declareth. Bal.b.) which as the other baine faith is called a Dead faith, so may this be called a quick or lively faith. And this is not onely the common beleefe of the Articles of our faith, but it is also a true truft and confidence of the mercy of God through our Lord Jelus Chrift, and a ftedfaft hope of all good thinges to be received at Gods hande: and that although we, through infire mitie or temptatio of our ghoftly enimie, Doe fal from him by fin: pet if we returne againe buto bim by true repentance, that be wil forgine, and forget our offences for his fonnes fake our faujour Jelus Chift, a wil make by inheritours with him of his euers lafting

A linely

ID

ch

ip ht

8

at

ly this

ő

0:

je

th

is

he at

it

th

ott

€.

n-

w

ln

de

'n.

is ut

gh

to

Es

n:

oft

ur

To

ng

lasting kingdome, and that in the meane time butil that king dome come, he will be our protectour and defendour in all perils and daungers, whatsoever doe chaunce: and that though some time he doeth sende by sharpe advertitie, pet that evermore he wil be a lowing father buto by, correcting by for our sinne, but not withdrawing his mercie finally from by, if we trust in him, a commit our selves wholy buto him, hang onely boon him, a call boon him, ready to obey and serve him. This is the true, lively, and busingned Christian faith, a is not in the mouth and outward profession onely: but it liveth, and stirreth inwardly, in the heart. And this faith is not without hope and trust in God, nor without the love of GD D and of our neyghbours, nor without the feare of God, nor without the desire to heare Gods word, and to followe the same in eschewing evill, and doing gladly all good workes.

This fayth (as S. Paul deferibeth it) is the fire grounde and Hebr. 12. foundation of the benefites which we ought to look foz, and trust to receive of God, a certificate and fire looking for them, although they pet sensibly appeare not but o ws. And after he saith, he that commeth to God, must believe, both that he is, and that he is a merciful rewarder of wel doers. And nothing commendeth good men but God, so much as this assured fayth and trust in him.

Of this farth, three things are frecially to be noted.

first, that this tayth both not lie dead in the hearte, but is Three lively and fruitefull in bringing forth good workes. Seconde, that without it, can no good workes be done, that walbe acceptade of faith, ble and pleasant to God. Thirde, what maner of good woorkes

they be, that this farth both bring forth.

for the fyrst, that the light can not be hid, but will shewe forth faith is fall it self at one place or other: So a true sayth can not be kept secret, of good but when occasion is offered, it will breake out, and shewe it selfer worker by good workes. And as the living bodie of a man ever exercise seth such thinges as belongeth to a natural and living bodie, for nourishment and prescruation of the same, as it hath neede, oportunitie, and occasion: even so the soule that hath a lively saith in it, will be dooing alway some good worke, which shall destate that it is swing, and will not be broccupied. Therefore when men heare in the Scriptures so high commendations of sayth, that it maketh us to please SDD, to syne with God.

### The first part of the Semon

Bod a to be the children of Bod : if then they phantalie that they be let at libertie from boing all good works, and may line as they luft, they trifle with God and Deceive themselves . Indit is a manifest token, that they befarre from bauing the true and lines ly faith, and also farre from knowledge, what true faith meaneth. for the berie fure and lively Christian faith is , not onely to beleene all thinges of God, which are conteined in holy Scripture , but allo is an earnest trufte , and confidence in God, that he both regarde bg, and that he is carefull over bg, as the father is over the Childe whome hee doth love, and that hee will bee mercifull buto be for his onely formes fake, and that wee have our Saujour Christe our perpetuall advocate and Driefte, in whole onely merites, oblation, and fuffering, we doe trust that our offences be continually washed a purged, whenfoeuer we (repenting truly) do returne to him, with our whole heart, fedfaltly betermining with our felues, through his grace, to obey and ferue him in keeping his comandements, and never to turne backe againe to lin . Such is the true faith, that the Scripture doeth so much commende, the which when it feeth and confidereth what God bath done for be, is also moos ued through continual affiliance of the spirite of God, to serve and please bim, to keepe his favour, to feare his displeasure, to cos tinue his obedient children, hewing thankefulnes againe by obferuing or keeping his commandements, and that freely, for true love chiefely, and not for dread of punishment, or love of temporali rewarde, confedering how clearely - without defers unges we have received his mercie and pardon freely.

'n

'n

Ol

te

fa

Off

fro

fai

Do

far

mo

lat

00

A

Co

the

Det

in

fed

lim

ned

my

DW

Th

offe

by b

whi

This true faith will thew foozth it felfe, and cannot long bee idle: for as it is written, The tult man doeth line by his faith. De neuer fleepeth, noz is idle, when he woulde wake, and bee well occupied. And God by his Provhet Jeremie faith, that he is a happy and bleffed man, which bath faith and confidence in God. for be is like a tree fet by the water fybe, and foreadeth his rootes absode towarde the moulture, and feareth not heate when it commeth, his leafe will be greene, and will not ceafe to bring foorth his fruite; even to, faithfull men (putting a way al feare of advertitie) will thewe fourth the fruite of their good workes, as occasion is offered to doethem.

Abac, a,

(Auto)

Z roda

#### The second part of the Sermon God was able by his omnipalited to waife him from Death. and performent brownie. Greenifrufted not

hep

ga

ues

eas

relv

olp

in

bg,

bat

dna

ate

na.

red,

our

igh

ıts,

ith, hen

100

ruo COS

obe

foz

e of

ser:

bee

nb.

bee

the

e in

eth

ate

e to

pal

Dog

Chane hearde in the firste parte of this Sermon , that there be two kindes of farth, a bead and an bufruitefull farth, and a farth lively that worketh by charitie. The first to be buprofita ble, the feconde, necessarie for the obtermine of our faluation : the which farth hath charitie all

maves toyned buto it, and is fruitefull, a bringeth forth all good morkes. Aow as concerning the fame matter, you hall heare what folometh. The wife man faith, De that beleeneth or 6500. will hearken buto his commandements. for if the do not theme our felues farthfull in our conversation, the farth which me mes tend to have, is but a favoned faith e because the true Christian farth is manifelly thewed by good living, and not by wordes onely as S. Augustine fayth, Good lining can not be separated from true faith, which woorketh by lone. Ind S. Chrylostome fide & opefaith, faith of it felte is ful of good workes: as foone as a man ribus Doth beleeve he chalbe carnifled with them. Dow plentiful this Capit. s. farth is of good workes, and how it maketh the work of one man lege & fide more acceptable to God, then of an other , S. Daul teacheth at Hela large in the ri. Chapter to the Deb. faying, That fapth made the Gene 4. oblation of Ibel, better then the oblation of Cain. This made Eccle 44. Anah to burloe the Arke . This made Abraham to forfake his Gen. 11. Countrep, and all his friendes, and to goe into a farre Countrep. there to dwel among frrangers. So did also Isabac and Iacob. Depending or handing onely of the helpe and trust that they had in God. And when they came to the countrey which God mounts fed them, they would builde no Cities, Townes, nor houses, but lined like strangers in Tentes, that might enery day be remoos ued. Their trust was so much in God, that they set but little by as: my worldly thing, for that God had prepared for them better dwelling places in beauen of his owne foundation and building. This faith made Abraham ready at Gods commandement, to Gene. 12. offer his owne fonne and heire Tahac, whom he loued fo well a Eccle, 13. by whom he was promised to have immunerable issue, among the which, one fould be borne, in whom al nations fould be bleffed, and received a second of the contract of the contracting

trufting fo much in God, that though he were flayne, pet that God was able by his omnipotent power to raile him from death, and perfourme his promife . Dee miltrufted not the promife of God, although buto his reason enery thing seemed contrary . De Exoda. beleeved berily that God would not forfake him in death and famine that was in the countrey. And in all other daungers that hee was brought buto, hee trusted ever that God should be his God, and his protectour and befendour, whatfoeuer hee fawe to the contrary. This faith wrought fo in the hearte of Moles, that he refused to be taken for king Pharao his Daughters sonne, and to have great inheritaunce in Egypt, thinking it better with the people of God to have affliction and forome, then with naughtie men, in finne to line pleafauntly for a time. By faith he cared not for the threatning of king Pharao : for his trult was fo in GDD. that he passed not of the felicitie of this woulde, but looked for the rewarde to come in heaven, fetting his hearte boon the invilible God, as if he had feene him ever prefent before his eyes. By faith, the children of Ifrael paffed through the red fea . 13p faith, the malles of Dierico fell bowne without froke, and many other wonderfull miracles have beene wrought. In all good men that heretofoze have ben, farth bath brought forth their good works, and obteined the promifes of God . farth hath flopped the Lis ons mouthes : faith hath quenched the force offper: farth hath escaped the smooths edges : faith hath ginen weake men strength, Dani. 3. victorie in battaple, overthrowen the armies of Infidells , raps fed the dead to life: fayth hath made good men to take advertitie in good parte, some have beene mocked and whipped, bounde, and eaft in prison, some have loft all their goodes, and lived in greate pouertie, some hane wandered in mountaines, hits, a wildernes,

> not be delivered, because they loked to rise againto a better state. Al thefe fathers, Wartyrs, and otherholy men, ( whome Sainte Paul fpake of ) had their faith furely fired in & D. when all the worlde was against them . They did not onely knowe & D to bee the Lorde, maker, and gouernour of all men in the worlde : but also they had a speciall considence and trufte, that hee was and woulde be their GDD, their com forter, ander, helper, mayntepner, and defender. This is the

> forme haue beene racked, forme flagn, forme ftoned, forme fatwen, forme

rent in pieces, some headed, some beent without mercy, and would

**Emilian** 

bi

tú

alt

in

fai

6

fat

an

th

bp

ab

cot

281

the

leff

int

fati

51

fait

feet

gin

line

fore

kno

feia

SPA

ther

life

**Epi** 

thai

that

Den

Iolii.6.

Danis.

.r-mio1.z

enfoles.

A STATE STATE

at b.

of

e av

at

ig

to

at

nd

he

tie

int

D.

the

ble

the

the

ret

nat

53.

Lis ath

rth,

av.

itie

one

ate

tes,

nne

ould

ate.

anno

D.

nely

f all

and שווום

the

han

Christian faith tobich these boly men had and we also ought to have. And although they were not named Christian men , pet was it a Christian faith that they had, for they looked for all benis fites of God the father, through the merites of his Some Telu Chift, as me now doe. This difference is betweene them and bs , for they looked when Christ shoulde come , and we be in the time when he is come . Therefore faiths Augustine, The time is to lobe altered and changed, but not the faith. for we have both one faith talles. in one Christ. The same holy ghost also that we have, had they, faith Saint Baul . for as the holy wholt both teach bs to truft in God, and to call boon him as our father : fo bid he teach them to fav, as it is written , Thou Lorde art our father and redeemer, and the name is without beginning and enertafting. God gaue Efai.43. them then grace to be his children, as he doth be now . But now by the comming of our Saufour Chaift, be haue received more aboundantly the spirite of God in our heartes, whereby we may conceine a greater faith, and a firer truff then many of them had." 28ut in effect they and we be all one: we have the same faith that they had in God, and they the fame that wee have . 3nd Saint Paul fo much extolleth their faith, because we shoulde no leffe, but rather moze, gine our felues wholy buto Christe, both in profession and lyuing, nowe when Christe is come, then the old fathers did before his comming. And by all the declaration of Saint Dani, it is evident, that the true, lively, and Christian faith, is no dead, baine, or bufruitefull thing, but a thing of perfeet bertue, of wonderful operation 'or working, a ftrength, brim ging foorth all good motions, and good workes.

All holy Scripture agreably beareth witnesse, that a true linely faith in Christ, both bring foorth good worker and theres fore every man must examine and trie himselfe diligently, to know whether he have the same true linely faith in his heart but feignedly, or not, which he shall knowe by the fruites thereof. Many that professed the faith of Christ, were in this errour, that they thought they knew God, and beleened in him, when in their life they declared the contrary: which errour S. John in his first Epifile confuting, writeth in this wife, Dereby we are certified that we knowe God, if we observe his commandements. He that faith, hee knoweth God, and observeth not his commans dementes, is a lier, and the trueth is not in him. And agains

he

1

no

et ;

ma

cen

bne

wh

the

fayth.

Liohn. 3. he faith, Mhofoener finneth, doeth not fee God, noz knoto him: let no man deceme pou, welbeloued children . And moreover he fageth, Deceby we knowe that we be of the trueth, and fo we fall I.Iohn:3. persmade our heartes, before him . for ifour owne heartes res z.lohn-3. prone bs, & D is aboue our hearts, and knoweth all things. Melbeloued, four heartes reprone by not, then have we confir Dence in God, and iball have of him whatfoeuer we afke, because the beepe his commandements, and doe those things that please him. Ind pet further he faith, Guery man that beleeneth that Telns is Christis borne of God, and we know that whatforner is bome of God, doeth not finne: but the generation of God pur geth bim, and the deuil doeth not toughe him. And finally he concludeth, and the weth the cause who he wrote this Episte, saying, for this cause have I thus writte buto you, that you may know 3.John. byou have everlasting life, which do beleeve in the some of God. and in his in Epittle he confirmeth the vohole matter offaith a 3.Iohn. workes infome mords laying be that doeth wel, is of God, and he that booth enill, knoweth not God. And as S. John faith. That as the linely knowledge and faith of God bringeth foorth good worker de faith he like wife of hope and charitie, that they can not frand with earl living. Ofhope he wayteth thus, Wee 3. John. 3. bright that when God hall appeare, we halbe like buto him, for me shall fee hun even as he is : and whosever hath this hope in 2. Joha. 2. him , Doeth purifie himfelfe, like as God is pure . And of charitie he faith these wordes. De that doeth keepe Gods worde and commandement, in him is truely the perfect love of God, And againe he faith. This is the love of God, that we hould keepe his commandements. And S. John wrote not this , as a fuotil faving. Deniled of his owne fantalie, but as a most certaine and necessary trueth-taught buto hur by Chaift hunfelfe, the eternall and infaltible verifie - who in many places doeth most clearely affirme. that faith bope and charitie can not confilt or fland without good and godly worker. Oftaith, he faith, He that beleeneth in the fon-Johns. a lohn.s. bath enerlaiting life: but he that beleeueth not in the forme , fhall not fee that life but the weath of God remaineth boon bin . In) the fame he confirmeth with a double othe, faming, forfooth and fortooth, I lay but a pour De that believely in me, bath enerlaiting John.6. life. Plow for a funch as he that beleeveth in Thuit, hathewerland fring life at mult needes confequently follow, that he is hath this

### nonvises of faluation.

1

al

29

**5.** 

14

fe

fe :

ać

er

T2)

na

α,

m

D.

Æ

Di

h.

th

ep ee

02

in

tie m ne no

ıç,

rp

ab

ne,

Da on.

all

n)

nd

na

a/

ns'

faith, must have also good works, and be studious to soferie goos commandements obediently. For to them that have entil toother, and lead their life in Disobedience, and transgression or breaking of Gods commandements, without repentance, perteineth not to everlafting life, but to everlatting beath, as Chrifte himselfe faith, They that boe well, thall goe into life eternall, but they Mannag. that Doe euill, thall goe into everlatting fire : And againe hee faith, I am the first letter, and the last, the beginning and the ending: to him that is a thirst, I will gine of the well of the water Apoess. of life freely: he that bath the bictoxie, shall have all thinges, and I wilbe his God, and he shalbe my some : but they that be feater full, militrulting God, and lacking faith, they that be curfed people, and murtherers, and fornicatours and forcerers, and all lie ers, that have their portion in the lake that burneth with fire and Charitie brinnfrone, which is the fecond death. Ind as Chrift budoubted foorth ly affirmeth, that true faith bringeth foorth good worker, to both good he lay likewife of Charitie. Who so ever hath my comandements worker. and keepeth them, that is be that loueth me and after befaith. he that loueth me, will keepe in worder, and he that lougth me not, keepeth not my wordes. Ind as the love of God is treed by John to good workes, fo is the feare of God alfo, as the wife man faith, Eccles, 26. The dread of God, putteth away finne. And also he faith, De that feareth God, will doe good mortes. One a work granted to their

Eccle,15, 1.

# The third part of the Sermon

Ou have heard in the fecond part of this Sermon, that no man found thinke that he hath that lively faith which feripture commandeth, when he lineth not obediently to Gods lawes, for all good workes fixing out of that faith: Ind also it hath beene des dared butoyou by examples, that faith maketh men fedfaff, qui et, and patient in all affliction. Low as concerning the faine matter, you shall beare what followeth. A man may some bes ceine himselfe, and thinke in his owne phantalie that he by faith knoweth God, loueth him, feareth him, and belongeth to him, when in berie deede he both nothing lefte. for the triall of all thefe thinges is a verie godly and Christian life. De that feeleth

1.John.z.

2. John.4.

Llohn.1.

#### The third part of the Sermon

a

le

ke

O

to

fp:

ter

lín

w

an

the

7

De

the

DO

mo

DE

tim

bu

mo

pie

bn

ani

pet

his hearte let to feeke Gods houour, and studyesh to knowe the will and commandementes of God, and to frame bunfelfe thereunto, and leadeth not his life after the delire of his owner flelhe, to ferue the denill by finne, but letteth his minde to ferue God for his owne fake, and for his fake also to lone all his neval bours 4 whether they be friendes or aduerfaries, doing good to energy man (las opoziunitie ferueth) and willingly hurting nomantfuch a man may well recovee in & D D, percepuing by the trade of his life, that hee unfeignedly hath the right know ledge of God, a lively fayth, a ftedfast hope, a true and bufeigs ned love, and feare of God. But he that casteth away the poke of Gods commandementes from his necke, and giveth himfelfe to live without true repentance, after his owne fentiall minde and pleasure; not regarding to knowe Gods worde, and much leffe to line according thereunto : fuch a man clearely decepueth himselfe, and seeth not his owne hearte, if hee thinketh that he either knoweth God, loueth himsteareth him, or trusteth in him. Sioneperaduenture fantalie in themselves, that they belong to 6 Di Da although they live in finne, and so they come to the Churche, and theme themselves as Gods deare children. But Saint John faith plainly, If we fay that we have any company i.toha.r. mith God, and walkein Darkenes, we Doe lie. Dther Doe bainely thinke that they knowe and love God, although they palle not of the commandements. But S. John faith clearely, he that faith I knowe God, and keepeth not his commandementes, he is a lver. Some fallely persmade themselves, that they love God. when they hate their neighbourg. But Saint John faith mas nifelly, I fam man lay I love God, and pet hateth his brother. beis a lyer in Dee that layth that he is in the light, and hateth his brother, be is fill in Darkenes . De that loueth his brother . Dwelleth in the light, but he that hateth his brother, is in Dark nes, and walketh in darkenes, and knoweth not whither hee goeth : for darkenelle hath blinded his eyes ... And moreover be layth, Hereby we manifelly knows the children of 600 from the children of the denill. De that doeth not righteoully, is not the childe of & D , not he that hateth his brother. Des ceine not your felues therefore, thinking that you have faith in God, or that you loue & D D, or doe truft in him, or doe feare. him, when you line in finne : for then your bigodly and finneful life Birt

The third dish for Sermon

fe

1ê:

ne he

DO

W

DA

g=

of

to de ch

th

n.

to

he

ip.

o£

th

D.

No

L,

th

t,

ee

er

mis

20

in

re

uL

life declareth the contentie what to energy law on thinkey! It perteineth to a Christian man to have this true Christan faith. and to trie himfelfe whether he bath it or no, and to knowe what belongeth to it, and how it both work in him. It is not the world that we can trust to the worlde and all that is thereing is but banitie. It is God that must be our defence and protection a gainst all temptation of wiekednesse and since, errours, super fition, idolatrie, and all enill. If all the world were on our fibe, and God against be, what coulde the worlde quaile be. Therfore let be fet our whole faith and truft in God, and neither o woulde, the dineil, nor all the power of them hall prevaile against be. Let be therefore ( good Christian people ) trie and cramine our faith, what it is: let be not flatter our selves, but looke boon our workes, and to indue of our faith what it is. Chaift himselfe speak Matt. 24. keth of this matter, and faith; The tree is knowne by the fruite. Therefore let be doe good workes, and thereby declare our faith to be plinely Christian faith. Let be by fuch bectues as snight to fpring out offaith, thew our election to be fure and fable, as Si. Deter teacheth, endeuour pour felues to make pour calling and a.Per. chooling certains by good workes. And also he saith: Admitter or Declare in your faith bertue, in bertue knowledge, in knowledge temperance, in temperance patience, in patience goddines im god lineste brotherly charitie, in brotherly charitie loue : so shall we thew in deede that we have the verie livelie Christian farth, and may so both certific our conscience the better that wee bee in the righte farth, and also by these meanes confirme other men. If these fruites doe not followe, wee doe but mocke with God, deceine our selves, and also other men. Well may wee beare the name of Christian men, but wee doe lacke the true faith that Doeth belong therebuto: for true faith both ever bring forth good workes, as Saint James faith & Shewe mee thy faith by thy lames.a. deedes. Thy deedes and workes must be an open testimornal of the fartheotherwise the faith (being without good morkes) is but the devils farth, the farth of the wicked, a fantalie of faith, and not a true Christian farth . And like as the deutls and enil peo ple be nothing the better for their counterfaite faith, but it is buto them the more cause of Danmation to they that be Christias and have reteined knowledge of God and of Christs merits, and pet of a fet purpole do line idely, without good workes, thinking the

#### The third part of the Sermon

'n

(1

h

Co

Œ

fo

re

m

be

th

be

no

lif

th

is

m

an

to

ed

L

no un thi

DO

DO

ag

bol

isi

me

but

the

mo

ani

tol

the name of a naked faith to be either fufficient for them, or elle fettting their minds boon baine pleafures of this world, do line in finne without repentance, not bettering the fruites that doe belong to fuch an bigh profession, boon such presumptuous perfons, and wilfull finners, must needes remayne the great bengeance of God, and eternall pimilbment in bell, prepared for the buinft and wicked livers. Therefore as you professe the name of Chrift (good Chriftian people) let no fuch phantafe and imagis nation of faith at any time bequile you: but be fure of your faith, trie it by pour lining, looke boon the fruites that commeth of it, marke the increase of lone and charitie by it towardes God and your neighbour, and so shall you perceive it to been true lively faith. If you feele and perceine fuch a faith in you, relovce in it: and be diligent to magniteine it, and keepe it fill in pou, let it be Daply increating, and more a more by well working, and to shall pou be fire pou that please God by this faith, a at the length fas other faithfull men have done before) to thall you ( when his will is) come to him, and receive the end and finall rewarde of pour faith (as Saint Deternameth it ) the faluation of pour soules: the which God graunt bs, that bath promised the same buto his faithful, to whom be all honoz and glozie, worlde with ontend. Amen. morts and inging an arren

&.Pet.L

# 5. A Sermon of good workes, an-

A the tall Sermon was declared but you, what the lively and true faith of a Christian mais, that it causeth not a man to be idle, but to be occupied in bringing foorth good woorkes, as occasion serveth.

No good works can be done without faith. lohn. 15.

Poes by Gods grace shall be declared the seconde thing that before was noted of faith, that without it can no good worke be done, accepted and pleasant but God. For as a braunche can not beare fruite of itselfe (saithour Sausour Christ) ercept it abide in the Uine: so can not you, except you a bide in me. Jam the Uine, and you be the braunches, he that abideth in me, and J in him, he bringeth south much fruite: for with

#### of good workes.

Mary Mary

elle

tine Doe

vers

the

eof

ante ith,

fit.

and

ielp nit:

t be ball

gth

e of

our

une

nith.

1177

out.

má

o be

as.

fe:

can

285

our

18

hat

for ith

without me, you can doe nothing. and S. Baul moueth that the Cunuche had faith, because he pleased God. For without faith (saith he)it is not possible to please God. And agains to the Rom. Heb. 11. he faith, whatfoeuer worke is done without faith, it is finne. Romit faith giveth life to the foule, and they be as much dead to God that lacke faith, as they be to the worlde, whose bodies lacke foules. Without faith all that is done of bs , is but dead before God, although the worke feeme never fo gay and glorious be fore man . Quen as the picture graven or painted, is but a dead representation of the thing it selfe, and is without life, or any maner of mooning e fo be the worker of all bufaithfull perfons before God. They doe appeare to be lively workes, and indeede they be but dead, not availing to the everlasting life. They be but shadowes and shewes of lively and good thinges, and not good and lively thinges indeede . for true faith, both give life to the worker, and out of suche faith come good worker that be very good workes in deede, and without faith, no worke In prefatiis good before God, as faith & Augustine . We must fet no good Palm.it. worker before faith, nor think that before faith a man may Doe any good works : for fuch workes although they feeme buto men to be praise worthy, pet in deede they but baine, and not allows ed before God. They be as the course of an Horse that runneth out of the way, which taketh great labour, but to no purpose. Let no man therefore (faith he ) recken boon his good workes before his faith: Where as faith was not, good workes were not. The intent (faith he) maketh the good workes, but faith unifte guide and order the intent of man . And Christe faith , If thine eye be naught, thy whole body is full of darkenes. The eye both fignifie the intent (faith Saint Augustine) wherewith a man boeth a thing. So that he which both not his good workes with Math. 6. a goody intent, and a true faith, that worketh by lone the whole In prefa. body belide (that is to lay) all the whole number of his workes, is barke, and there is no light in them. for good deedes be not measured by the facts them selves, and so discerned from vices, but by the ends a entents for the which they were done. If a Dea then man cloth the naked feede the hungrie, and do fuch other like workes : pet because he doeth them not in faith, for the honour and love of God, they be but dead, baine, and fruiteleffe worker to him. faith is it that both commende the worke to God : for

(as.

and

mit it 19

tha

Con mit

nou nou

Doel

am but

ged

cifu

that

Don In

and

loft

by it

mar

mbe

(bai

Lug

goe!

thep

buto

Sal the f

to cu

(as Saint Augustine faith) whether thou wilt or no, that worke that commeth not of faith, is naught where the faith of Chaifte is not the foundation, there is no good worke, what building fo euer me make. There is one morke, in p which be al good works. that is, faith, which worketh by charitie: if thou have it, thou halt the ground of all good workes. For the vertues of frength, wile Dome, temperaunce, and inflice, be all referred bito this fame faith. without this faith we have not them, but only the names and hadowes of them (as S. Augustine layth) All the life of them that lacke the true faith, is linne, a nothing is good, with out him, that is the authour of goodnes: where he is not, there is but faigned bertue, although it be in the best works. And S. Augustine, Declaring this berse of the Psalme, the turtle bath founde a nest where the may beene ber young birdes, faith, that Jewes, Deretikes, a pagans doe good workes, they cloath the maked, feed the poore, a doe other worker of mercy: but because they be not done in the true faith, therefore the birds be loft. But if they remayne in faith, then faith is the nest and last garde of their birdes, that is to fav, fafegarde of their good workes, that the rewarde of them be not otterly loft. And this matter (which S. Augustine at large in many bookes disputeth ) S. Ambrole

John J.

gentium concludeth in fewe wordes faving. Der by nature would with lib. Cap.3. Stand bice, either by naturall will or reason. be dothin baine gar nish the time of this life a attaineth not the verif true vertues: for without the worthipping of the true God, that which feineth to be bertue, is vice. And pet most plainely to this purpose will In fermo- teth S. John Chryfostome in this wife, Dou shall finde many oe de fide, which have not the true faith, and be not of the flocke of Chaiff, lege, & ipi and pet (as it appeareth) they flourish in good workes of merty: you that finde them ful of vietie, compassion, and given to instice, and yet for all that they have no fruite of their workes, because p chiefe work lacketh. for when p Jewes asked, of Christ what they hold do to work good works the answered. This is is work of god, to beleeve in him who he fent: for he called faith the work of God. And as sone as a man bath faith, anone he hal florish in good works: for faith of it felfe is full of good workes, a nothing is good without faith. And for a limilitude, he latth that they which gliffer and thinne in good workes without faith in God, be like deade men, which have goodly and pretious tombes, and

ofgood worker.

12kg

uffe

glo

BS.

naft

rife

une

neg

of

th

ere

\$.

ath

hat

the

use

But

eof

hat

ích

ole

th

ar

g: th 1215 np

ift.

tp:

ce,

tle

at

26

28

m

na

Ū,

and pet it anapleth them nothing . faith may not be naked without good workes , for then it is no true faith: and inhen it is adiopned to workes, pet it is about the workes. for as men that be berie men in Deede, first haue life, and after be nourisbed: fo muft our faith in Chrift que before, and after bee nourifhed with good workes. And life may be without nourilbment, but nourilbment cannot be without life. I man mult needes bee nourifhed by good workes, but first be must baue faith. De that doeth good derdes, pet without faith be bath no life . I can thew a man that by faith without worker lived, and came to beauen: but without faith, neuer man had life. The thiefe that was banged, when Chailt fuffered, did beleene onely, and the most mercifull God inftilied bim. And because no man hall fay againe that he lacked time to doe good workes, for elfe he woulde have Done them: trueth it is, and I will not contend therein, but this I wil furely affirme, that faith onely faued bim. If he had lived. and not regarded faith and the workes thereof, be thould have loft his faluation agame. But this is the effect that I fap of faith by it felte faucd bim, but works by themselves never inftified any Dere pe haue bearde the minde of Saint Chry foftome, inhereby pou may perceine, that neither faith is without works (having oportunitie thereto ) nor workes can availe to everlas Bing life, without faith, sunce and placed and an area and an area and an area

# The seconde part of the Sermon

of three thinges which were in the former Sermon specially noted of linely faith, two bee bes Delated buto pou. The first was, & faith is neuer idle, without good worker when occasion ferneth. The fecond, that good works, acceptable to God cannot be done without faith. Row to Whatwor goe footh to the thirde part, that is, no hat manner of books ker they they be which fpringe out of true faith, and leade faithfull men fpring out buto euerlafting life. This cannot be knowen fo well, as by our of faith. Saufour Chrid bimfelte, who was afted of a certain great ma. the fame queftion, what works thall I do (faid a prince) to come to everlatting life: To who Jefus answered, If thou will come

to

the

and

50

inte

and

true

mas

mo

Self

ten

f02

ped

to f

Bay

can

ani

and

of ?

pol

ner

the

of 2

the

ma

inu

line

ani

(D)

be 1

kin

mt

mi Æn

bn

ple

וכם

mu mi

tha

they

to everlacking life, keepe the commandementes. But the prince not fatiffied herewith, afked farther, mabich commandements! Math. 19. The Scribes and Pharifees had made so manye of their owne lawes and traditions, to bring men to beauen, befides Gods commandementes, that this man was in doubte whe ther hee boulde come to beauen by those lawes and traditions or by the lawe of God, and therefore be alked Christ which commaundementes be meant. no berebnto Thift made him a plain auniwere, rehearling the commandementes of God, laying,

Math. 16. Thou fhalt not kill, thou fhalt not commit abulterie, thou fhalt

The workes that leade to heaven,be workes of maunde-

his fyrit fallyng phantafie to please

mentes.

Gentiles,

not feale, thou fhalt not beare falle witheffe, honour the father and the mother, and love the neighbour as the felfe. Be which wordes Christ declared that the lawes of God be the verie way that doeth leade to enertalting life, and not the traditions and lawes of men. So that this is to be taken for a most true les godscom- fon taught by Chaiftes owne mouth, that the wootkes of the mozall commaundementes of God be the berie true workes of faith, which leade to the bleffed life to come. But the blindneffe Man from and malice of man, even from the beginning, bath ever beene readie to fall from Gods commaundementes. als aldam the from god, first man, having but one commandement, that he shoulde not comman- eate of the feuite forbidden: not withfranding Gods commandementes, Dement, he gaue credite bnto the woman, feduced by the fubtill hath ener perswasion of the Serpent, and so folowed his owne will, and been ready perswasion of the Serpent, and so folowed his owne will, and to doe the left Gods commaundement. Ind euer fince that time, all that like, and came of him, have beene fo blinded through originall finne, that uifework, they have beene euer readie to fall from & D and his lawe, of his own and to invent a newe way unto faluation by moorkes of their owne benice: so much that almost all the worlde, forfaking the God with- true honour of the onely eternal living God, wandered about their owne phantalies, worthipping some the Sunne, pasoone, The diai. the Starres, fome Jupiter, Juno, Diana, Saturnus, Apollo, 1es & ido- Deptunis, Ceres, Bacchus, and other deade men and women. lattie of f Some therewith not latilfied, worlhipped dinerfe kindes of beaftes, birdes, fifth, foule, and ferpents, every countrie, towne, and house in manner being deuided, and fetting by images of

fuch thinges as they liked, and worthipping the fame. Such

was the rudenes of the people, after they fell to their owne phan

talies a left the eternal living God a his commandements, that

#### of good workes.

Lince

ntg! their

Ades

wbe=

tons

com,

olain

ing,

Malt

ther

buch map

and e les

f the

es of

neffe

eene

the

not

nan:

btill

and

that

that

me.

heit

the

bout

one. ollo.

nen. s of

one

g of uch

han

that

thep

they Deniled innumerable Images a Gods. In which errour and blindnes they did remarne, butill fuch time as almightie 500, pitying the blindnes of man, lent his true Prophet Poles into the worlde, to reprodue and rebuke this extreme madneffe, and to teach the people to knowe the onely living God and his true bonour and worldippe. But the corrupt inclination of man, mas to much given to folowe his owne phantalic, and (as pour moulde fay) to favour his owne by de, that he brought by bims felfe, that all the admonitions, exhortations, benefites, athreas. tenings of God, coulde not keepe him from fuch his inventions. for notwithstanding all the benefites of God shewed buto the The deuireople of I frael, pet when Wofes went by into the mountaine lattie of \$ to weake with almightie God, he had tarried there but a fewe liracliter. Bayes, when the people began to innent news Gods. And as it came in their heads, they made a calfe of gold, a smeeled bowne, and worthipped it. And after that, they followed the Moabites, Exodes, and worthinged Beelphearor the Mondites God. Read the booke of Indges, the booke of the kings, and the Prophets, and there you hall finde howe unftedfaft the people were, howefull of inventions and more readie to runne after their owne phantalies, then Gods most boly commandementes. There shall you read of Baal, Doloch, Chamos, Delchom, Baalpeor, Affaroth, Bell, the Deagon Delapus, the beafen Servent, the twelvesiones, & many other, buto whose images the people with great Denotio invented Dilarimages, vietious decking a fenfing them, kneeling down, soffering to the, thinking pan high merit before god, and to be efteemed about the precept g and commandementes of God. And where at that time God commanded no Sacrifice to be made but in Terusalem onely, they did cleane contrarie, mai king Altars and facrifices enery where in hilles in woodes and inhouses, not regarding Gods commaindements, but effees ming their own phantalies and benotions to be better then thep. And the errour hereof was to twead abroad, that not onely the bulcarned people, but also the Prieftes and teachers of the people ple, partly by glozic and conetoulnes were corrupted, and partly by ignozance blindly deceived with the fame aboutinations: So much, that king Achab having but only Welias a true toucher & minuter of 500, there were eight hundred and liftle Prieftes, that personaded him to honour Baal, and to doe facrifice up the moode

among §

#### The thirde part of the Sermon

DÍ

at

fa

th

6

nf

6

110

rp

for

his

the

thá

rei

ten

liti

naı

tra ani

fo f

Den fo b

me offi

con and

Den

Aiti

offe

Doff

to e

thei

19hi

brea

then

teac

taug

to th

leau

woodes or grones. And to continued that horrible error, but till the three noble kinges, as Josaphat, Ezechias, and Jos fing, Gods chofen Ministers, bestroped the same clearely, and brought againe the people from fuch their feigned inventions, but to the very commandements of God: for the which thing their immortall rewarde and glory, doeth, and thail remaine with Religions Bod for euer . And beside the foresaide inventions, the inclina and lectes tion of man to have his owne boly devotions, denifed new fects, and religions, called Pharifees, Saduces, a Seribes, with ma ny boly and godly traditions and ordinances (as it feemed by the outwarde appearance, and goodly gliftering of the workes) but in bery deede all tending to idolatrie, superstition, and hypocrifies their harts within beingful of malice, pride, couetoufnes, all wie kednes. Against which sectes, and their metended holines, Christ cried out moze behemently, the he did against any other persons, faping, and often rehearling these wordes, Moe bee to pou Socibes and Pharifees, ve hypocrites, for you make cleane the bestell without, but within pe be full of ranine and filthinesse: thou blinde Pharifee, and hypocrite, firste make the inwarde parte cleane. For notwithstanding all the goodly traditions and outwarde thewes of good workes, beuiled of their owner magination, wherby they appeared to the world most religious and holy of all men, yet Christe (who sawe their heartes) knewe that they were inwardely in the fighte of God, most buholy. moste abominable, and farthest from God of all men. Theres fore faide he buto them, Procrites, the Prophet Cfai spake full truely of you, when he faide, This people honour mee with their lips, but their heart is farre from me. They worthin me in baine, that teach doctrines and commandements of men: for you leave

Matt.15 Elai.19.

Mans laws must be obsermed and kept, but not as Godslaws

And though Christe faide, They worthin God in baine, that teach doctrines and commandementes of men e pet he meant not thereby to overthrowe all mens commandements, for hee hunselse was ever obedient to the Princes and their lawes, made for good order and governance of the people, but her reprodued the lawes and traditions made by the Scribes and Pharifees, whiche were not made onely for good order of the people, (as the Civile lawes were) but they were (let by so high, that they were made to be right and pure worthing ping

the commandemets of God, to keepe your owne traditions.

of good workes.

bm

OF

and

bnu

hetr

oith

ina

cts.

ma

the

but

ifiet

wie

mist

mg,

pou

ane

este:

arde

ong

neis

ous

eme

rolv,

eres

full :

heir

aine.

eaue

3. 118

that

eant

2 hee

wes,

thee

ibes

12Det (,fet

Dip

ping

ping of God, as they had beene equall with Gods lawes, or about them: for many of Gods lawes could not be kept, but were faine to gine place buto them . This arrogancie God Detefted , that man hould so advance his lawes to make them equall with Gods lawes, wherein the true honouring and right worthiping of God frandeth, and to make his lawes for them to bee left of. God hath appointed his lawes, whereby his pleafure is to be hos noured. Dis pleasure is also, that al mens laws, not being contrary buto his lawes, shalbe obeyed and kept, as good and necessary for every common weale, but not as things wherein principally his honour refleth: and all civill and mans lawes, either bee, or hould be made, to bring in men the better to keepe Gods lawes, that confequently, or folowingly, God fould be the better honos red by them. Howbeit, the Seribes and Pharifes were not cons tent that their lawes should be no higher esteemed then other pos fitine and civil lawes, not woulde not have them called by the name of other temporali lawes : but called them holy and godly traditions, and would have them effected not onely for a right and true worthiping of God (as Gods lawes be in deede ) but als Holy erafo for the most high honoring of God, to the which the commauns were ested dements of God thould give place . And for this cause did Christe med as to behemently speak against them, saying, your traditions which Gods laws men effecine to high, be abomination before God . for commonly offichtraditions, foloweth the transarellion or breaking ofgods Holynelle commandements, a a more benotion in keeping of fuch thinges, of mans and a greater confcience in breaking of them, then of the comman common-Dementes of & D . As the Seribes and Pharifes fo fuper ly occasio ditionly, and ferupulously kept the Sabboth, that they were is offenoffended with Christ, because he healed siche men, and with his a ded. poliles, because they being fore hungrie, gathered theeares of corn Mat, rato eate been that day, and because his disciples walked not their hands, so often as the traditions required : the Scribes a Pharifes quarrelled with Christ, faying, Why doe thy disciples breake the traditions of the Seigniours - But Christe laied to their charge, that they for to beeve their owne traditions, did teach men to breake the berie commandements of God . for they taught the people fuch a denotion, that they offred their gods in to the treasure house of p temple, buder p pretence of gods honor, leaning their fathers a mothers (to who they were chiefly boud) unholven a

#### The thirde part of the Sermon

Ħ

b

tt

u

6

gi

lei

1111

111

m

ou

bn

10

mo

the

OIL

bio had

uer full

wir wei

hot

can

wor

ron

ed,c

Supe

in th

peti

paffe

Atai

iuch

der !

princ

thief

and

and to they brake the commaundementes of God, to keepe their otone traditions. They effeemed more an oth made by the golde or oblation in the Temple, the an oth made in the name of 500 hunselfe, or of the Temple . They were more studious to pave their tithes of small thinges, then to doe the greater thinges commaunded of God, as workes of mercie, or to doe inflice, or to deale funcerely, byzightly, and faithfully, with God and man. Thele (faith Chaift) ought to bee done, and the other not lefte bindone. And to be short, they were of so blind sudgement, that they flumbled at a fraw and leaved ouer a blocke. They moun (as it were) nicely take a flie out of their cup, and orinke botone a whole Camel. And therefore Christ called them blind autos warning his disciples from time to time to eschew their doctrin. for although they feemed to the worlde to be most perfect men. both in living and teaching, pet was their life but hypocrific and their doctrine but fowe leaven, mingled with superfition,ide latrie, a ouerthwart indgement, fetting bp the traditions and ordinaunces of man, in freede of Gods commaundementes.

# The thirde part of the Sermon of good workes.

Dat all men might rightly indge of good workes. it hath beene declared in the fecond part of this fermon, what kinde of good works they be that got moulde have his people to walke in, namely fuch as be bath commaunded in his boly Scripture, & not fuch workes as men have ftubied out of their owne braine, of a blinde zeale and denotion, without the worde of God: And by mistaking the nature of good workes, man bath most high ip displeased God, and hath gone from his wil and commande mentes . So that thus you have heard howe much the world from the beginning untill Chailtes time, was ever readie to fall from the commaundementes of God, and to feeke other meanes to bonour and ferue him, after a devotion founde out of their owne heades: and howe they did let by their owne traditions, as high or aboue Gods commaundementes, which hath hap penedallo in our times (the more it is to bee lamented) no lefte then

of good works.

then it did among the Tewes, and that by prozemption, or at feat by the negligence of them that chiefely ought to have preferred the pure and heavenly Doctrine left by Chaifte 18 3 10 hat man have uing any indgement or learning, toyned with a true zeale unto God, both not fee, and lament, to have entred into Chriffes relis gion, such falle doctrine, superstition, idolatrie, hypocriste; and oa ther enounities and abufes, fo as by little a little, through the foure leanen thereof, the Cweete breade of Gods holy word hath beene much hindered and laved apart. Rener had the Jewes in their. most blindenes, fo many Pilgrimages unto Images, nor bled fo much kneeling, killing, and fenfing of them, as hath beene bled in our time. Sectes and feigned religious were neither the fourties eth part fo many among the Tewes, not more superfittionly and sectes and bigodly abused, then of late baies they have beene among be, seligion a-Which fects and religious, had fo many hypocriticall and faigned Christian works in their flate of religion (as they arrogatly named it) that men. their lampes (as they fait) ran alwayes ouer, able to fatifile, not onely for their own finnes, but also for all other their benefactors, brothers, and lifters of religion, as most bugodly a craftily thep had perswaded the multitude of ignorant people: keeping in dis ners places (as it were) marts of markets ofmerites, being full of their holy reliques, images, theines, and works of overflow being abundance ready to be fold. And all things which they had. mere called holy holy cowles, holy arroles, holy pardons, beads, holy thooes, holy rules, and all full of holines. And what thing can be more foolish more superstitious, or bugodly, then that men, women, and children, should weare a friers coat, to deliner them from agues or peftilence-or when they die, or when they be buris ed, cause it to be cast opo them, in hope thereby to be saued- Which impersition, although (thankes be to God) it hath beene little bled in this Realme, pet in divers other Realmes, it hath beene, and pet it is bled among many both learned and unlearned. But to palle over the innumerable superstitionines that bath beene in Arange apparel, in litence, in Dozmitozp, in Clopiter, in Chapter, w choise of meats, and drinks, and in such like things, let be confis der what enounities and adules have beene in the three chiefe principall pointes, which they called the three elentials, or three thiefe foundations of religion, that is to lay, obedience, challitie, and withill pouertie.

firste

their

apide

(50d

pape

nges

.Dz to

tan.

lefte

that

auoo

anore

uids.

ctrin.

men, e,and

1,100:

s and

nekes.

is let

tgod

fuch

ure, 8

zaine,

i: And

high

ande

mozli

to fall

eanes

e their

tions,

bap.

to leffe

then

eg.

#### The third part of the Sermon

first, bnder pretence or colour of obedience to their father in

t

D

fi

fa

bi

ch

me

ho

DU

ell

m

m

to

for

280

\$

ter

fafi

fuc

gre

we

tot

nen

and

thir

nine

(ag

geli

the

the

meg

who

The three chiefe vower of religion (which obedience they made themselves) they were made

religion free by their rule and Canons, from the obedience of their natural father and mother, and from the obedience of Emperour and king, and all temporall power, whome of verie duety by Gods lawes they were bound to obey. And so the possession of their of Dience not due, was a forfaking of their due obedience. And how their profession of chastity was kept, it is more honesty to palle of uer in silence, and let the worlde indge of that which is well knowne, then with buchaft wordes, by expressing of their buchaft life, to offend chaft and godly eares. And as for their wilfull pos uerty, it was fuch, that when in possessions, iewels, plate, and riches, they were equal or about merchants, gentlemen, Barons, Carles , and Dukes : pet by this fubtill fophisticall terme , Proprium in commune, that is to fay, Proper in common, they moe ked the worlde, perswading, that not withstanding all their pos festions, and riches, pet they kept their bowe, and were in wilful pouertie . But for all their riches , they might neuer helpe father not mother, not other that were in Deede bery needy and poore, without the licence of their father Abbot, Paior, or Warden, and pet they might take of every man, but they might not give ought to any man, no not to them whom the lawes of God bounde them to helpe . And so through their traditions and rules , the lawes of God could beare no rule with them. And therefore of the might be most truely faide, that which Christ spake buto the Pharifees, Pou breake the comandements of God by your traditions : you honour God with your lippes, but your hearts be far from him. Anothe longer prayers they bled by day and by night, buder pres tence or coulour of fuch holines, to get the fauour of widowes, and other fimple folkes, that they might fing Trentalles and fer nice for their hufoandes and friendes, and admit or receive them into their mayers: the more truely is berified of them the faying of Chrift, Woe be buto you Seribes and Pharifees, Popocrites, for you benour widowes houses, buder colour of long prayers, therefore your damnation halbe the greater . Woe bee to you Scribes and Pharifees Proceites, for you goe about by fea and by lande to make moe Rouices, and newe brethren, and when they be let in , or received of your fect, you make them the thildzen ofhell, worfe then your felues be . Honour bee to God,

Matt.24.

of good works

r in

rabe

ural

and

ado

it o

**wor** 

ens

lism

haft

I poo

and

ong,

Pro-

noc

pof

rilful

ther

0026

and

uaht

bem

mes

nicht

fees,

: pou

him.

: pre

mes,

d fer

them

pring

rites,

pers,

pou c

op sea

, and

n the

(500)

mho

who did put light in the hearte of his faithfull and true minister. of most famous memorie king Denrie the eight, and gave him the knowledge of his word, and an earnest affection to feeke his giorie, and to put away all fuch fuperfittious, and Wharifaicall fectes by Antichaist invented, and fet by agains the true words of God, and glozie of his most blessed name, as hee gave the like fpirite buto the most noble and famous Drinces, Josaphat, Jo fias, and Ezerhias. God grant all by the Queenes highneffe faithfull and true subjectes, to feede of the Sweete and favorie bread of Gods owne worde, and (as Christe commanded ) to eff thewe all our Pharifaicall and Papifficall leaven of mang faigs ned religion. Which, although it were before God molte abs hominable, and contrarie to Gods commandements, and Christs pure religion, pet it was prayled to be a most godly life, and high ell flate of perfection cas though a man might be more gooly, and more perfect by keeping the rules, traditions, and professions of men, then by keeping the holy comandements of God. And brieflie Other deto paste ouer the bogodly and counterfait religion, let by rehearse wifes & for fome other kindes of Papifficall Superstitions and abuses, as of perstition, Beades, of Lady Platters, and Bofaries, of fifteene Des, of Sainte Barnardes berfes, of Saint Agathes letters, of Durs gatorie, of malles latisfactorie, of Stations, and Jubilees, of feigned Reliques, or Dallowed Beades, Belles, Bread, Mas ter, Pfalmes, Candells, free, and fuch other: of superstitious fallinges, of fraternities or brotherheades, of pardons, with fuch like merchandife, which were so esteemed and abused to the great preindice of Gods clorie and commandements, that they were made most high and most holy thinges, whereby to attaine to the enertaiting life, or remission of sime: yea also baine ins nentions, bufruitefull ceremonies, and bugodly lawes, decrees, and counsels of Bome, were in fuch wife aduanced, that no docreetals, thing was thought comparable in authoritie, wisebome, lears ning, and godlinelle, buto them . So that the lawes of Rome, (as they faide) were to be received of all men, as the foure Quangeliftes, to the which all lawes of Princes must give place. And the lawes of God allo partly were left of, and leffe effected, that the faid lawes, decrees a counfels, with their traditios a ceremos mes, might be more duly kept, a had in greater renerence. Thus om 115 1 D 2 maso

#### The third part of the Sermon

the people through ignorance to blinded , with the godly thewe and appearance of those thinges, that they thought the keeping of them to be a moze holineffe, a moze perfect feruice and honous eing of God, and more pleasing to God, then the keeping of Gods commandements. Suche bath beene the corrupt inclina tion of many ever superstitions given to make newe honouring of God of his owne head, and then to have more affection and denotion to keepe that, then to fearche out Gods holy commans mentes, and to keepe them : And furthermore, to take Gods commandements for mens commandements, and mens commandements, for Gods commandements, pea, and for the high est and most perfect and holy of all Gods commandements. And so was all coufused, that scant well learned men, and but a finale number of them knowe, or at the least would knowe; and durste affirme the trueth, to separate or sever Gods comman dements; from the commandementes of men : Whereupon did groboe uniche errour diperstition, idolatrie, baine religi on, overthwart inogenent; great contention, with all brigodly luing.

An exhortation to the keeping of Gods comandements.

A briefe reharfal of Gods co maddements.

Moherfoze, as you have any seale to the right and pure honous ring of God, as you have any regarde to your owne foules, and to the blethat is to come, which is both without paine and with out ende, apply pour felues chiefly about all thunges, to reade and beare Gods word marke dilicently therein what his will is you that doe, and with all your endenour apply your felies to follow the fante in first pour must have an assured faith in God, and give your felites totrolly buto him, love him in proferritie and adverlitie, and baend to offend him enermore. Thenfor his fake low all ment, triendes and foes, because they bee his creation and image, and redeemed by Christe, as ye are. Cast in your mindes, home pollinar doe good anto all men, buto pour powers, and hart no man : Duey all pour Americars, and governours, ferne your Mailters faithfully and diligently, as well in their absence agantheir prefence, not for Dreade of punishment onely but for conscience sake, knowing that you are bound so to doe by Gods commandements. Disober not pour fathers and Mothers but honous theur helpe them, and please them to pour power. Donielle not, kill not, beade not, neither Caunder, nor hate any man abut lone all men, speake well of all men, helpe and succour

euc

0

b

PPE

m

b

'n

ue

the

ani

det

Ima

hea

riti

ann

ting

selfe

chai

allo

that

trun

#### of good workes.

euery man, as pou may, pea, euen pour enunies that hafe pou, that speake entil of you, and that doe hurt you. Take no mans goods, noz couet pour neighbours goods wrongfully, but cons tent your felues with that which pe get truely, and also best ow pour owne goods charitablie, as neede and cale requireth . flee all idolatrie, witchcraft, and periury, commit no maner of as bulterie, fornication, or other buchaftenelle, in will, nor in beede, with any other mans wife, widdowe, of maide, or otherwife. and tranapling continually, (during pour life) thus in bees ping the commandements of God ( wherein frandeth the pure, principall, and right honour of God, and which wrought in faith, God hath ordeined to be the right trade and path way buto heas nen ) pou fhall not faile, as Chailt hath promifed, to come to that bleffed and everlafting life, where you thall live in glosp and top with God for ener : to whom be praife, honour, and imperie, for es uer and euer . Jimen.

#### 6 A Sermon of Christian loue and charitie, z.

f all thinges that bee good to bee faught buto their from people, there is nothing more necessarile : as spoken of, and dayly called boon, then charitie : as well for that all maner of workes of rightcoulnesses with as also that the decaye there

of is the ruine or fall of the worlde, the banishment of bertue, and the cause of all bice. And for so much as almost every man, maketh and frameth to him felf charitie after his owne appetite, and how detellable to ever bis life be, both bito God and man, pet he pers Iwadeth hunfelfe still that he hath charitie: therefore you shall heare nowe a true and plaine description or setting foorth of cha titie, not of mens imagination, but of the bery wordes and ers ample of our famour Jefus Chaift . In which Description or fets ting foorth, every man (as it were in a glaffe) may confider hims felfe, and fee plainely without errour, whether he be in the true charitie, or not.

Charitieis, to lone God with all out heart, all out life, and What the all our powers and frength . With all our heart : That is to fap, rine is. that our heart, minde, and Audie be fet to beleeve his word, to of God. trust in him, and to love him above all other thinges that we love

all still

3.1124

ut for GODS. thers, ower. team uccour euc

me

nina DU

a of

ma

cina Des

ans

ods om

tigh

nts: but

and nan

mode

eliais rodiv

mou and with

eand s vou

Molle

giue

Duct

e loue

n and

ndes,

, and

ferue

Sence.

## The first part of the Sermon

1

t

t

Ø

ú

t

C

u

t

t

1

I

t

1

t

9

1

f

1

t

0

best in heaven or in earth . With all our life: that is to far, that our chiefe tote and belight be let boon him and his honour, and our whole life given buto the fervice of him above al things, with him to line and die, and to forfake all other thinges, rather then him. for he that loueth his father or mother, fonne, or daughter, house, or land, more then me (faith Christe) is not worthy to have Mat.10. me. With all our power, that is to lap, that with our handes and feete, with our eyes and eares, our mouthes a tongues, and with all our parts and powers, both of body and foule, wee should bee The love given to the keeping and fulfilling of his commandements. This is the first and principall part of charitie, but it is not the whole: of thy for charitie is also to loue every man, good and evill, friende, and neighbor. foe, and whatfoeuer cause be given to the contrary , pet neverthes leffe to beare good will and heart buto every man, to ble our felues wel buto them, as well in words and countenances, as in all our outward acts and deeds: for fo Christ hunfelf taught, and fo also he perfourmed in deed. Of the love of God he taught in Matas. this wife buto a doctour of the law, that afked him which was the great and chiefe commandement in the law . Loue thy Lorde God, (faid Christ) with all the heart, with all the life, and with all Mat.S. thy minde. And of the love, that wee ought to have among our felues ech to other, he teacheth be thus, Don have heard it taught in times palt, Thou thalt love thy friend, and hate thy foe : But I tell pou, Loue pour enimies, speake well of them that defame Mat-S. you and speake euill of you, do wel to them that hate you, prap for them that bere and perfecute you, that you may be the children of pour father that is in heaven. for he maketh his Sunne to rife both boon the euill and good, and lendeth raine to the fuft a bus inft. for if you love them that love you, what rewarde shall you hance Do not the Publicanes likewife . And if you speake well only of them that be your brethren a deare beloued friends, what great matter is that Do not the Beathe the faine alfor Thefe be the very words of our Sautour Christ himselfe, touching & love of our neighbour. And for as much as the Pharifees ( with their most pestilent traditios, a falle interpretations, a gloses) had cor rupted, a almost clearely stopped by this pure wel of gods linely word, teaching & this love a charitie pertained onely to a mans friends, a that it was inflicient for a man to love them which doe loue him, a hate his foes: therfore Christ opened this wel again, that

and

mith

then

hter,

haue

and

mith

D bee

This

hole:

rthes

THO S

asin

t, and abt in

mas

Lozde

ith all

acour

anaht

But

efame

ap for

nenof

to rife

a bu

all you

e well what

hese be

ploue their

ad cov

inch

mans

ich doc

againt, purged purged it, a frouredit by giving but o his godly lawe of charitie, a true a clear interpretation, which is this ip we ought to love everie man, both friend and foe, adding thereto what commodity we had have thereby, awhat incomodity by doing the contrary. What thing can we with fo good for by, as the eternal heavenly father, to rechen, and take by for his children. And this shall we be sure of (saith Christ) of we love every man without exception. And if we doe otherwise (saith he) we be no better then the Pharisees, Publicanes, and Peathen, and shall have our rewarde with them, that is, to be thut out from the munder of GDD So chosen children, and from his everlasting inheritaunce in heaven.

Thus of true charitie, Chaift taught that every man is bound to love & D above all thinges, and to love everie man, friend and foe. And this likewife he did ble himfelfe, erhozting his aduerfaries, rebuking the faultes of his aduerfaries, and when he could not amend them, vet be praved for them. fift he loued God his father aboue all thinges, fo much that he fought not his owne glozie and will, but the glozie and will of his father. T feeke not (faide he) mine owne will, but the will of him that lent tohn s. mee. Aoz he refused not to die, to satisfie his fathers will, says Mate 26, ing, Ifit may be, let this cup of death palle from me : if not, the will be done; and not mine . De loued not onely his freendes, but also his enimies, which (in their heartes ) bare erceeding great batred against him, and with their tongues spake all enill of him. and in their actes and deedes purfued him with all their might a power, even buto death, pet all this not with flanding, he with diew not his favour from them, but fill loved them, preached buto them of love, rebuked their false doctrine, their wicked lining, and did good buto them, patiently taking whatfoeuer they spake or did against him . When they gave him enill wordes, be gaue none euill againe. When they did frike him, he did not finite againe : and when he fuffered beath, he did not flay them, nor threaten them, but prayed for them, and did put all things to his fathers will. And as a sheepe that is lead buto the hambles to be flaine, and as a lambe that is thorne of his fleece, maketh no noise nor relistance, even so he went to his death, with out any repugnace, or opening of his mouth to fap any enil. Thus have I let forth buto you, that charity is, as well by the doctrine,

**10** 4

55

u

ti

an

kı

b

bá

th

th

fre

th

be

ha

and the same

bis

mi

œi

to

DO

ba

the to

gai

Def

MU

mie

toro

neti

Chi

ther

am

thin

hou

erg !

thei

THE !

as by the examples of Christe himselfe, whereby also every man may without error know himselfe, what state and condition bee frandeth in, whether he be in charitie, and so the childe of the fas ther in heaven or not. for although almost every man persons Deth himselfe to be in charitie, petlet him examine none other man, but his own heart, his life and convertation, and he wal not be deceined, but truely discerne and indge whether he be in perfect charitie or not. for he that followeth not his owne appetite and will, but give th hunfelfe earneitly to God, to doe all his will and commandements, hee map be fire that hee loueth & D aboue all things, and els furely hee loueth him not, whatfoeuer hee pretende : as Chrifte laide, Ifpe loue mee, keepe my com mandementes. for hee that knoweth im commandements, and keepeth them, he it is (fayth Christe) that loueth mee . And and gaine hee faith, Dee that loueth mee, will keepe my worde. and my father will love him, and wee will both come to him, and dwell with him: and hee that loueth mee not, will not keepe my words. And likewife he that beareth a good heart and minde, and bleth wel his tongue and deeds buto every man, friend and for he may know thereby that he hath charitie. And when he is fure also that almightie God taketh himsoz his deare beloued forme, as S. John faith, Dereby manifestly are knowen 1.10ha. 4- the children of God, from the children of the Deuill; for wholo ener doeth not loue his brother, belongeth not buto God.

The second part of the Sermon

this stone of charitie, 1600 0000 8 f

Du haue hearde a plaine and a fruitefull letting foorth of charitie and howe profitable and neces fatie a thing charitie is: how charitie fretcheth it felfe both to God and man , friende , and foe, and that by the doctrine and example of Chifte: and also who may certific himselfe whether he be

in perfect charitie, or not. Aow as concerning the same matter, it foloweth. The peruerle nature of man, corrupt with finne, and destitute of Bods word and grace, thinking it against all reason, that a manificuld love his enemie, and hath many perfualions which bring him to the contrary . Against all which reasons, wee ought as wel to let the teaching, as the lining of our Sautour Thrifte,

Against c: rnal mé that will not forgiue their mimics.

John.13.

#### of charitie.

Christ, who louing be when we were his enemies doeth feache bs to lone our enemies. De did patiently take for be many reprothes fuffered beating, and most cruell beath . Therefore we be no members of him, if we will not follow him. Chaite ( faith & De ter fuffred for be, leaving an example that we thould follow him.

furthermoze the must consider, that to lone our friends, is no more but that which theenes, abulterers, homicides, and al wie ked persons do:in so much that Jewes, Turks, Infidels, and all bruite beafts, do love them that be their friends, of whome they baue their liuing,oz any other benefites . But to love enimies, is the proper condition onely of them that bee the children of God, the disciples and followers of Chair ." Potwithmanding mans froward and corrupt nature weigheth over deepely many times, the offence and difpleaface done buto him by enimies, and thinbeth it a burden intollerable, to bee bounde to lone them that hate him. But the burben should be easie mough, if on the other tide energ man would confider, what diffleature he hath bone to his entime againe, and what pleature he bath retented of his enil mie. And if we finde no equall of even recompence, neither in reecining pleasures of our enimie, not in requiting displeasures bus to him againethen let be ponder the difpleatures which we have done against almightie God, how often and how gelenoiss lives have oftended him, whereof if we will have of 500 formenette, there is none other remedie, but to forgue the offences done but to be, which be very finall, in comparison of our offences Done a gainst God. And if we confider that be, which hatti offerided bes described not to be forginen of vollet be consider against the be much leffe deserve to be forgiven of God! Ind although one bail mie deferue not to be forginen for his owne lake wer weidtight to forgine him for Gods lone, confidering how great and many benetits we have received of him, without our deterbes, white tifat Chaiffe hath defensed of by , that for his sale wie Abande Company them their trespants committed against 8512 this man vis a necessary question to bee distanced sile grendritte request an Aquestion think, fpeake, and doe wel vinto energyman, both good and entre how can magnitiates execute inflice opon malefuelogical bull or ers with charific. How can they earl elif menti public, can early their goods, a formetime their lines, net stought lands a content

toil not fuffer them forto bothereunto is a platife and a briefe med Answere.

wood

tatt

330

fas

OBS

het not

EC9 ite

ofli D

net

m md

as De.

me

ofili

art

ana

dil

are

aem solo:

ind

cels

hit

md

te:

be

et,

und

011ms oee.

nit ste\_

bot

feb

600

bn

110

all

it (

tru

Ceei

bp

the

th

DOE

chil

ber

tal

bin

bol

and

ma

bee

ftia

Charitie bath two offices.

fivere, that plagues and punishments be not cuill of them felues, if they be well taken of the harmelelle . And to an euill man they are both good and necessarie, and may bee executed according to charitie, and with charitie should be executed . for Declaration whereof, you hall binderstand that charitie hath two offices, the one contrary to the other, and pet both necessary to be bled boon men of contrary fort and Disposition. The one office of charitie is; to cherishe good and harmelesse men , not to oppresse them with falle acculations, but to encourage them with rewardes to doe well, and to continue in well boing, befending them with the fword from their aduerfariescas the office of Bpshopps and pas fours is, to praise good men for well boing, that they may contis mie therein, and to rebuke and correct by the worde of God, the offences and erpmes of all entil disposed persons. The other of fice of charitie is , to rebuke , correct, and punit bice, without regarde of perfons, and is to be bled against them onely that be cutil men, and malefactours or entil doers. And that it is affect the officie of charitie to rebuke, punifb, and correct them that be enill, as it is to cheriff and reward them that be good a harmes leffe, Saint Paul Declareth (writing to the Bomanes) faping, Romis. That the high powers are ordeined of God, not to be dreadfull to them that do well, but butomalefactours, to braw the food to take bengeance of hun that committeth the finne. Ind S. Baul biobeth Timothie foutly and earneftly to rebuke finne by

the morde of God. So that both offices thould be biligently erecuted to fight against the kingdome of the deusli, the preacher with a word, and the governours with the fword. Elle thep nets ther love 600, northe whom they governe, if for lacke of correct tion) they wilfully inffer God to be offended, and them whom they govern to perill for as every louing father correcteth his natural fon when he boeth amille, or els he loueth him not : lo al governments of Realmes, Countries, Townes, a Houles, should louingly course them which ber offendours, but their government, if they have any release effective from which live innocently, if they have any release effice, or love but o them of whome then have governance. Ind fuch rebubes apunithments of them offend, und be bone in due time, lead by belay ; poffenders fall beadlong into al mange of mischief, anot onely be emit theselves, but allogo burt butomany men beating other by their ead er ample to finne and outrage after them . As one theefe may both

ep to

OH

the

on

ig.

ith

oe

the as

titis

the

of

ut

be

ell be

nes

ıg, ulf

020 S.

re her

nets cecu

DIII

bis oal

uD iers

res ome

jem

fall

ies,

eta

may both both robbe many men, and also make many theeues : and one feditious person may allure many, and nove a whole Towne or countrie. And fuch entil persons that be so great offenders to God, and the common weale, charitie requireth to be cut from the bodie of the common weale, least they corrupt other good a bonest persons: like as a good surgion cutteth away a rotten and feftred member, for love be bath to the whole bodie, left it infect other members adiopning buto it. Thus it is Declared bnto you what true charitie or Christian love is so plainly that no man neede to be deceived. nobich lone, wholoever keepeth, not onely towardes God, (whome bee is bounde to love about all things) but also toward his neighbour, as well friend as foe, it fall furely keepe him from all offence of God; and fuft offence of man. Therefore beare well away this one short lesson, that by true Chistian charitie, God ought to be loued, good, and euill, friende, and foe, and to all fuch, me ought ( as we may) to doe good: those that be good, of lone to encourage and cherithe, be cause they be good: and those that be entil, of love to procure and feeke their correction and due punishment, that they may thereby either be brought to goodneffe, or at the least that God and the common wealth may be leffe burt and offended. And if wee thus direct our life, by Christian love and charitie, then Christe doeth promise and affure by that bee loueth by, that we be the children of our heavenly father, reconciled to his favour, bery me bers of Chailt: and after this shorte time of this present a more tal life, we that have with him everlatting life, in his everlatting singdome of heaven : Therefore to him with the father and the holy Choft, be all honour and glozie, nowe and for ever. Amen.

7 A Sermon against swearing

and periurie 2. Amightie God, to the intent his most holy name shoulde be had in honour, and ever more be magnified of the people commandeth of no man thould take his name bainelp in his mouth, threatning punishment How and buto him that bureverently abufethit by twearing, for twearing in what and blafphemie. To the intent therefore that this com? cantes is maundement maye bee the better knowen and kepte, it shall lawfull to bee declared buto you, both howe it is lawefull for Chit tian people to Iweare, and also what perill and daunger

### The first part of the Sermon

0

pl

be

02

tr

th

en

TO DO

te

of

th

di

fp

T

m

m

tn

tri

fit

DZ th

m

DU

fit

ke

Dů

DE

gi

it is bainely to I weare, or to be for Iwoine. first, when Judges require other of people for Declaration or opening of the truth, or for execution of inflice, this manner of (wearing is lawfull: also when men make faithfull promifes, with calling to witnes of the name of God, to keepe couenantes, honest promifes, fatutes, lawes, and good cultomes, as Christian Brinces Doe in their conclutions of peace for connertation of common wealths, and prinate persons promise their fidelitie in matrimonie, or one to an other in honeftie atrue friendship: a all men when they boe Iweare to keep comon laws, a local fratutes, a good customes, for one order to be had a continued amog men, when arbiects do Oweare to be true a faithfull to their king a foueraigne Lord, a whe Judges, magiftrats, a officers, Iweare truly to execute their offices, and when a man would affirme the trueth to the fetting foorth of Gods glozie (for the faluation of the people) in open preaching of the Golpett, or in gining of good countell prinately for their foules health; all thefe manner of fwearing, for taines necessarie and honest, be lawfull. But when men doe sweare of custome, in reasoning, buying and felling, or other daily commus nications (as many be comon and great (wearers) fuch kinde of fwearing is bugodly, bulawfull, and forbidden by the coman-Dement of God. for fuch forearing is nothing elfe, but taking of Gods holy name in baine. And here is to bee noted, that lawfull Iwearing is not forbidden, but commaunded by almightie God, for we have examples of Chailt, and godly men, in holy Scrips ture, that did fweare them felues, and required other of others likewife. Ind Gods commandement is, Thou hall dreade the Lord God, and Chall Cweare by his name. And almightie God be

Deut.9.

his Prophet Dauid faith, All men thall bee prapled that Iweare Pialm. 63. by hun.

John. 3. 2.Cor.t.

Gcn. 24.

Thus bid our Sauiour Chrift fweare diverfe times, faying, Metily, berily. And S. paul fweareth thus, I call God to wit neffe. And Abraham (waring olde) required an oth of his fer uant, that he hould procure a wife for his fonne I fahat, which thould come of his owne kinred: a the fernant did fweare that he would perfoune his mafters wil. Abraham also being requis red, did (meare buto abinte lechthe hing of Geraris, be thoulde not hutte him , nor his posteritie, and like wife Did Abimelech Oweare bito Abraham And Danid did Cweare to be a continue a

ges

th.

ull:

neg

tas

ein

hg,

one

Doe

es.

DO

, 4

eir

mg

nsc

elv

feg

of

nus ade

ans

rof

fail

ob.

m

ers

the

bp

are

nu.

oits

(et)

ich

hat

UL

iDa

ech

ica

ich

faithfull friend to Jonathas, and Jonathas old flocare to beconte paul. Cherciare Ch. Ques ond busin lindtist asmo

Also God once commaunded, that if a thing were laide to pledge to any man, or left with him to keepe, if the fame thing mere stollen, or lost, that the keeper thereof shoulde bee sworne hefore Judges, that he bid not conneigh it away, nor bled anne beceite in caufing the fame to be conneced away, by his confent or knowledge. And S. Daul faith, that in all matters of cons Heb. C trouerfie betweene two perlons, where as one faith, Dea, and the other, nay, so as no due proofe can bee had of the truth, the ende of enery fuch controuer lie mult bee an oth, ministred by a Judge. And moreover God by the Prophet Teremie farth thou Jer: 4,2. halt Iweare, The Lord lineth, in truth, in indgement, in righteouines. So that wholoever (weareth when hee is required of a Tudge, let him be fure in his conscience that his oth have these three conditions, and he shall never neede to bee asrayde of periurie. pontriot foretre andre. and good ferting

first, be that sweareth, map sweare fruely, that is, be must What com Cetting a part all fauour and affection to the parties have the cthought trueth onely before his eyes, and for love thereof, fave and to have. beake that which bee knoweth to bee trueth, and no further. The feconde is, he that taketh an oth, must doe it with indges ment, not rally, and bnadufedly, but foberlie, confidering what an oth is. The third is thee that flue areth must flue are The third. in righteousness that is, for the veriescale and love which hee beareth to the Defence of innorencie, to the maintenance of the trueth, and of the righteousnelle of the matter or cause: all profite, disprofite, all love and favour buto the person for friendship or sinced laide apart. Thus an othe (if it have with it thele be willed three conditions) is a part of Gods glozie, which we are bound in feripby his commaundements to give buto him. for he willeth that ture to we hall fweare onely by his name, not that he hath pleasure in the name our othes, but like as he commaunded the Tewes to offer faction of God. fices botto bin, not for any delight that he had in them, but to keepe the Jewes from committing of idolatrie: to be commans during to sweare by his holy name, doeth not teach be that he delighterh in swearing; but hee thereby forbiddeth all men to guehis alorie to any creature in heaven, earth, or water. Wie theeto pour fee, that other lawfull are commanded of God, bled

(b)

in

ne

hú

Ca

th

m

T

bí

T

fcc

in

tri

tri

ne

DU

m

bo

b

an

CE

bli

an

cu

for2

boi

308

of

thould

Efai.42 Pfal.15.

Commodities had & obser ucd.

of Patriarhes and Prophetes, of Christe himselfe, and of his 3. postle Paul. Therefore Christian people must thinke lawfult othes, both godly and necessary. for by lawfull promise and cos uenantesconfirmed by othes, princes and their countreies, are by lawful confirmed in common tranquillitie and peace . 18p holp promiles othema with calling the name of God to witnesse, wee be made linely members of Chaifte, when wee profeste his religion, receining the Sacrament of Baptifine. By like holy promife, the Sacras ment of Datrimonie knitteth man and wife in perpetuall loue, that they defire not to bee separated for any displeasure or ads uersitie that shall after happen . By lawfull othes, which kinges, Drinces, Judges, and Magistrates Doe Iweare, com mon lawes are kept inviolate, Juftice is indifferently ministred, harmeleffe perfons, fatherles children, widowes, and poore men, are defended from murderers, oppressours, and theenes, that they fuffer no wronge, nor take any harme . . By lawfull othes, mutuall focietie, amitie, and good order is kept continue ally in all comminalties, as Bozoughes, Cities, Townes, and Uillages. And by lawfull othes, malefactors are fearched out, wrong doers are punilhed, and they which fusteine wrong, are restored to their right. Therefore lawfull Iwearing can not be es will, which bringeth buto be fo many godly, good, and necessarie commodities . Wherefore, when Christ fo earnestly forbad free ring is for ring, it may not fo be buderfranded, as though hee did forbid all maner of othes : but he forbibbeth all baine fwearing and for Inveating both by God and by his creatures, as the common ble of fwearing in buying, felling, and in our daply com munication, to the intent enery Chailtian mans woode thoulde be as wel regarded in such matters, as if he shoulde confirme his communication with an othe . for every Christian mans worde (faith S. Hierome) (hould be fo true, bit thould be regarded as an oth . And Chryfostome witnesting the same, faith, It is not cons uenient to Iweare: for what needeth by to Iweare, when it is not lawfull for one of vs to make a lee buto another : Deraduenture forme will fap, I am compelled to freare, for els men that do com mune with me, or do bup and fel with me, wil not beleeve me. To this answereth S. Chrysoftome, that he that thus saith, sheweth hunselfe to be an buill and a beceiffull person : for if he were a truffie man, and his beedes taken to agree with his wordes, her

bidden.

An obiection.

An anfwere.

#### of swearing.

thould not need to fiveare at al. for he that beth truth a plaines in his bargapning and communication, bee thall baue no ncede by fuch baine fwearing, to bring himfelfe in credence with his neighbours, not bis neighbours will not mistructe bis favinges. And if his credence be so much loft indeede, that he thinketh no man will beleeve him without bee fweare, then be may well thinke his crebence is cleane gone. for trueth it is (as Theophilactus writeth) that no man is leffe trufted, then be that bieth much to fwere. Ind almightie God by the wife man faith, Eccle. 33. That man which (weareth much thall bee full of finne, and the

frourge of God hall not depart from his house.

titu

004

are

leg

elp

ma

ta

ue.

ab

ich

un

ed.

oze

eg,

full

mu

dne

ut,

are

199

rie

eas

ail

fo24 onne

UIII adli hig

12De

an

ano: not

nre

Otto

To

eth

ne a

hee

ould

But here some men will say, for excusing of their many othes An other in their dayly talke: no by (boulde I not fweare, when I fweare truely? To fuch men it may be laide, that though they Iweare truely, yet in I wearing often bnaduifedly, for trifles, without necessitie, and when they shoulde not sweare, they be not with out fault, but do take Gods most holy name in baine. Abuch more bigodly and biroife men are they, that abute Gods mofte fwere. holy name, not onely in buying and felling of small thinges dais ly in al places, but also in eating, brinking, playing, communing and reasoning. As if none of these thinges might be bone, era cent in doing of them, the most boly name of God be commonly bled and abused, bainely and burenerently talked of, Smoone by. and for morne, to the breaking of Gods commandement, a procurement of bis indianation.

The seconde part of the Sermon of swearing.

D u hane beene taught in the first part of this Ser mon against swearing and periurie, what greate Danger it is to ble p name of God in baine. And that all kinde of Iwearing is not bulawfull, neither a

gainst Gods commaundement, and that there bee three thinges required in a tawfull oth. first, that it bee made to the mainteinance of the trueth. Seconde, that it be made with judgement, not rally and buaduifedly. Thirdly, for the reale a love of Justice. We heard also what comodities cometh of lawful othes, what danger cometh of raft a bulawful oths.

Rome

Lawfull

promifes

would be

better regarded.

Joshe.

#### The second part of the Sermon

Rowe as concerning the rest of the same matter, you shall bus

bu

b

8

ti

B

Ce

a

Ĺ

m

al

O

m

at

Br

m

fo

bu

at

mo

lot

th

bo

ete

be

ge

COL

mi

ip 1

ter

for

ani

CEU

mh

deritande, that as well they ble the name of Bod in baine, that by an oth make unlawfull promifes of good and honeft things, and perfoune them not: as they which doe promife enil and bulawfull thinges, and doe performe the fame. Of fuch men that regarde not their godie promiles bounde by an oth, but witother and tingly and wilfullie breaketh them, we doe reade in holy Crips ture two notable puniffmentes. first, Josue and the people of Tracl made a league and faithfull promile of perpetuall amitie and friendship with the Gabaonites: not withstanding afterwarde in the dayes of wicked Saul, many of thefe Gabaonits were murdered, contrarie to the faide faithfull promife made. noherewith almightie God was fore displeased, that he sent an bninerfall hunger bypon the whole countrie, which continued by the space of three yeares. And God woulde not withdraw his punishment, butilithe laide offence was revenced by the death of feuen fons, or next kinfinen of king Saul. And wheres as Zedekias king of Diernfalem, had promifed fidelitie to the 18.King. 2. king of Chaldea, afterwarde when Zedechias contrarie to his oth and allegiance, Did rebell against king Aabuchodonoso: this Deathen king by Gods permillion and lufferance, inuading the lande of Turie, and belieging the citie of Dierusalem, compels

blie into Babylon.

Volawful othes and promiles are not to be kept

Math, 14.

Act.12. Judge. II.

Thus doeth God shewe plainely howe much bee abborreth breakers of honest promises bound by an oth made in his name. And of them that make wicked promites by an oth, and will performe the same, we have example in the Scriptures, chiefs lp of Herode, of the wicked Tewes, and of Jephtah. Herode promised by an oth buto the Damosell which daunced before him, to give buto her whatfoeuer the woulde afke: when thee was instructed before of her wicked mother to aske the heade of S. John Baptift. Berode as he tooke a wicked oth, so hee more wickedly performed the fame, and cruelly flue the most hos ly Drophet. Likewife did the malicious Jewes make an oth, curling themselves if they did either eate or drinke, butill they had flame S. Paul. And Jephtath when God had given to him picte:

led the faide king Zedechias to flee, and in fleeing, tooke hun

puloner, flew his sonnes before his face, and put out both his

eves: and binding him with chapnes, led him paisoner misera

of frearing.

120

end hat

as,

bns hat

otts

ip:

e of

itie

ters

iits

De.

tan

ued

am the

eres the

hig

for:

ina pels

nun

his

era

etb

me.

mill

riefs 30a

fore

Thee

e of

bee

:hos oth

hep him

cte

bictorie of the children of Ammon, promifed (of a fooliff benotis on buto God, to offer for a lacrifice buto bim, that perion which of his owne house boulde first meete with him after his returne home. By force of which fonde and bnaduifed oth, bee did flap his owne and onely daughter, which came out of his house with muth and tope to welcome him home. Thus the promise which he made (moft foolibly) to God, againft Gods euerlafting will, and the law of nature, most cruelly bee performed, so committing against God double offence. Therefore, who foeuer maketh any promile, binding himfelfe therebnto by an oth: let him fores fee that the thing which he promifeth, be good, boneft, and not againste the commaundemente of & D D, and that it bee in his owne power to performe it infly. And fuche good promiles muft all men beeve euermoze affuredly. 28ut if a man at any time thall, either of ignozance, or of malice, promite and (weare to Doe any thing which is either against the lawe of als mightie God, or not in his power to performe:let him take it for an bulawfull and bugodly oth.

Row Comething to fpeak of periurie, to the intent you bould Against knowe howe great and greeuous an offence against God this periurie. milfull perfurie is, I will hew you what it is to take an oth be Anoth be fore a Judge bpon a booke. first, when they, laying their hands fore a byon the Golpell booke, Doe Tweare truely to enquire, a to make ludge. a true prefentment of thinges where with they be charged, and not to let from faying the trueth, and boing truely, for fauour, lone, dread, or malice of any perfon, as God may helpe them, and the holy contents of that booke: They must consider, that in that booke is conteined Gods euerlasting trueth, bis most boly and eternall worde, whereby we have forginenelle of our finnes, & be made inheritours of heaven, to line for ever with Gods Ingels and his faints, in iop and gladnes. In the Golpell booke is conteined also Gods terrible threates to oblinate linners, that will not amend their lines, not beleene the trueth of God his bo ly worde, and the euerlasting paine prepared in hell for Joolaters, Dypocrites, for falle and baine f weaters, for periured men, for falle witnesse bearers, for falle conbemners of innocente and gpitleffe men, and for them which for fattour, hide the crimes of euil doers, that they shoulde not be punished. So that who so ever wilfully forsweare theselnes bud Christs holy Eua

gelie,

gelie, they betterly forfake Gods mercie, goodnes, and truth, the

merites of our Sauiour Chilles nativitie, life, pallion, Death, refurrection, and aftention, they refule the forgivenelle of fins promifed to all penitent linuers, the loves of beauen, the companie w Angels and Saintes for euer. All which benefites a comforts are promised buto true Christian persons in the Gospells And they, to being for two me byon the Golvell, do betake thems felues to the divels fervice, the maifter of all lies, falfebood, Des ceit, and perincie, prouoking the great indignation and curse of God against them in this life, and the terrible wrath and judge: ment of our lauiour Chaiff, at the great day of the last judgemet. when he shall justly judge both the quicke a the dead, according to their workes. for wholoever forfaketh the trueth, for love or D. Colea Cure of any man, or for lucce a profit to hunselfe, doeth for fake Chrift and with Judas betray him. And although fuch per tured mens fallehood be now kept fecret, pet it shall be opened at the last day, when the fecretes of all mens hartes (ball be manie feft to all the worlde. And then the trueth shall appeare, and ace here volet cufe them; and their owne confcience, withal the bleffed companie of beauen, fhall beare witneffe truely againft the. And Chift the righteous Judge thall then infly condemne them to everla do to ever. Ring thame and beath. This finne of periurie, ahmightie God by the prophet Malachie Doth threaten to punis fore, faying boto the Jewes, I will come to pou in indgement, and I will bee a fwift witnes and a tharpe judge boon forcerers, adulterers, and vertured persons. which thing to the Prophet Facharie God des clareth in a billon, wherein the Prophete lawe a booke fleeing. which was twentie cubits long, and ten cubites broad, God faps ing then but o him, this is the curle that that goe foozth boon the face of the earth, for fallehood, fallelwearing, and periurie. And this curle thall enter into p house of the falle man, and into the house of the periured man, and it shall remaine in the middest of his house, consume him, a the timber a stones of his house. Thus you fee howe much God doth hate periurie, a what punishment

> Thus you have bearde, bow and in what causes it is lawful for a Christian man to sweare: pee have heard what properties. a conditions a lawfull oth mult have, and also howe fuch lawfull other are both godly and necestarie to be observed: ye have

God bath prevared for falle Iweares, and periured perions.

beard

fü

m

ot

ar

at

ſa

th

ltu

tri

110

the

mi

flo

hu

nir

DOI

**fra** 

off

mil

tru

ote

fib

w

Though

Malag,

of swearing.

the ath.

ng,

pa

om:

ems

Des

eof

ges

nēt.

ing ie oz

foz=

dat ania aca ida:

wift

ria

Dbv

nto

ee a

and

Des !

ing,

faps

the

and

the

ftof

bus

rent

pful

ties

aw:

aue

eard

heard, that it is not lawfull to sweare vainelie, (that is) other waves then in such causes, a after such sort as is declared. Ind finally, pe have heard howe dainnable a thing it is, either to for sweare our selves, or to keepe an unlawfull and an unaduised oth. Wherefore let us earnestly cal for grace, y al vaine swearing and periurie set a part, we may onely use such others as be lawful and godly, and that we may truely without all fraude keepe the same, according to Gods will and pleasure. To whome with the Sonne and the holy Ghoste, bee all honour and glorie. Innen.

# 8 A Sermon bow daungerous a thing it is to fall from God. 2

four going fro God, the wife man faith, that pride twas the first beginning: for by it mans hearte was turned from God his maker. For pride (faith he) is the fountaine of all finne: be that bath it, thal be ful of cuttinges, and at the ende it that ouerthiow him. and as by pride and finne we goe from God, fo thall God and al goodnes with him go fro bg. and the prophet Diee both plain ozec. f. ly affirme, that they which goe away fill from God by vicious huing, and pet woulde go about to pacifie him otherwise by fat trifice, and enterteyne him thereby, they labour in baine. for not with standing all their factifice, pet be goeth still away from them. for so much saith the Prophet as they do not applie their mindes to returne to God, although they go about with whole flockes and heardes to feeke the Lorde, pet they hall not finde him: for he is gone away from them. But as touching our tucning to God, or from God, you hall understande, that it may be done dinerfe waves. Sometimes directly by Idolatrie, as To fract and Juda then did: formetimes men goe from God by facke offaith, and infitriffing of God, whereof Clai weaketh in this wile, moe to them that go bowne into Egypt to feeke for helpe, Elaige trusting in horses, a having confidence in the number of chareotes, and pullaunce or power of horlemen: They have no confidence in the holie God of Ilraell, nor feeche for the Lord. But what followeth? The Lord hall let his hande fall bypon them, and .

#### The first part of the Sermon

and bowne thall come both the helper, and he that is holpen: they hall be deftroped altogether. Sometime men goe from Bod by the neglecting of his commandements concerning their neighbors, which commandeth them to expresse hartie loue towards euery man , as Zacharie faide bnto the people in Gods behalfe, Biue true indgement, lbewe mercie and compassion es uery one to his brother, imagine no deceite towards widowes, or children fatherleffe and motherleffe, toward ftrangers, or the poore, let no man forge euil in his heart against his brother. But thefe thinges they paffed not of, they turned their backes a went their way, they stopped their eares & they might not heare, they hardened their harts as an Adamant fone, that they might not liften to the Lawe, and the wordes that the L D 13 D had fent through his boly fpirit, by his ancient prophets. noberefore the Lord thewed his great indignation byon them. It came to paffe (faith the prophet) even as I told them: as they would not beare, so whe they cried, they were not heard, but were scattered into all king domes which they never knew, and their land was made befolate. And to be thost, all they that may not abide the worde of God, but following the perfuations a stubburnes of their owne bartes, goe backewarde and not forwarde ( as it is faide in Jeremie) They go and turne awaye from God. Info much that Origen faith, he that with minde, with studie, with beedes, with thought, and care applyeth and giveth bimlelfe to Gods worde, and thinketh bpon his lawes daye and night, gi ueth hunfelfe wholly to God, a in his precepts and commaunde ments is exercised: this is be that is turned to God. And on tho ther part he faith, Wholoever is occupied with fables and tales when the word of God is rehearled, he is turned fro God. no ho focuer in time of reading Gods word, is carefull in his minde of worldip butines of mone, or of lucre, he is turned fro God: who foener is entangled with the cares of possessions, filled with co netouines of riches, who locuer fludieth for the glorie and honor of this would, he is turned from God. So that after his minds who focuer haff not a freciall minde to that thing that is com maded or taught of God, be that Doth not liften unto it, embrace, and print it in his hart, to thintent that he may duely fashion his life thereafter, he is plainly turned from God, although be doo ther things of his own denotion mind, which to him feeme bet

n

ti

bo

of

ht

th

th

fin

lat

Lo

as

fera

por

(50

btt

this

ceit

or h

toc

tob

two

tet,

lecc.7.

Zich.7.

lete.7 .

### of falling from God.

en:

om

eir

tos

DOS

16

es,

the

But

ent

bey

not

had

fore

e to

not

ered

mas

the

s of

it is

in fo

nith

fe to

t,al

nde

tho

ales

obo:

Deof

who

b co:

onet

inde

COMP

12acc

n his

Doo

e bet tet,

ter, and more to Bods honour. no bich thing to be frue, me bee faucht and admonished in the holy scripture by the example of king Saul, who being comanded of God by Samuel, he hold kill all the Amalekites, a bestrop them clearly with their goods and cattell: pet be, being moved partly with pitie, and partly as he thought) with Denotion buto God, faued Agag the king, a all the cheefe of their cattell, therewith to make facrifice bnto God. noherewith all God being difpleafed highly, faid buto the 1020: phet Samuel, Trepent that ener I made Saul king, for he hath forfaken me, and not followed my wordes, and fo he comanded Samuell to thew hun, and when Samuel afked wherefore (co: trarie to Gods worde) he had faued the cattell, hee excused the matter, partly, by feare, faying, he durft do none other, for that the people woulde have it to, partly, for that they were goodly beaftes, he thought God woulde be contente, feeing it was done of a good intent and benotion, to honour God with the facrifice of them.

But Samuel reproduing all such intentes and denotions (feeme they never fo much to Gods honour, if they fland not with his worde, whereby we may be affured of his pleasure ) saide in this wife, would God have factifices and offerings: De rather that his worde should be obeyed? To obey him, is better then of ferings, and to liften to him, is better then to offer the fatte of Kainmes: yea, to repugne against his boyce is as enill as the finne of footblaying: a not to agree to it, is like abominable Toos latric. And now forasmuch as thou hast cast away the word of p Lorde, he hath cast away thee, that thou shouldest not be king.

Top all thefe examples of holy fcripture, we may knowe, that The turas wee forlake God, to thall he euer forlake bs. And what mis God from ferable state boeth consequently and necessarily follow thereby man. pon, a man may eafily confider by the terrible threatninges of God. And although he consider not all the saide miserie to the bitermost, being sogreat that it passeth any mans capacitie in this life sufficiently to consider the same: yet he shall sound perceine fo much thereof, that if his hearte be not moze then fronic, of harder then the Adamant, he hall feare, tremble, and quake, to call the same to his remembrance. first the displeasure of God towards be, is commonly expressed in the Scripture by these two things: by the wing his feareful countenance byon bs, a by

#### The first part of the Sermon

furning his face, or biding it from bs. By theming his breadful countenance, is fignified his great weath: but by turning bis face or biding thereof, is many times more fignified, that is to fay, that he clearly forfaketh by, and giveth by over. The which lignifications be taken of the properties of mens manners. for men towardes the who they favour, commonly beare a good, a cheareful, and a louing countenance: to that by the face or couns tenance of a man, it both commonly appeare what will or mind he beareth towards other. So when God doeth flew his dread ful countenance towards by, that is to fay. doth sende dreadfull plagues of (word, famine, or peltilence bpo bs, it appeareth that he is greatly wroth with by. But when he withdraweth from bs his (word, the right doctrine of Chift, his gratious affifance and appe (which is ever iopned to his worde) and leaveth by to our owne wit, our owne will & Arength: he declareth then, that he beginneth to forfake bs. for whereas God bath frewed to al them that truely beleeve his Golpel, his face of mercie in Jelus Chift, which doeth to lighten their heartes, that they (if they beholde it as they ought to do) be transformed to his Image, be made partakers of the beauenly light, and of his boly fritt, and be fallioned to him in al goodnes requilit to the children of god: fo.if they after do neglect the fame, if they be buthankeful buto him, if they order not their lives according to his example a docs trine, and to the fetting forth of his glozie, he wil take away fro thein his kingdome, his boly word, whereby he should raigne in them, because they bring not foorth the fruite thereof that he looketh for . Deverthelelle, he is to mercifull, and of fo long ful fetance, that he doth not thew boon by that great weath fouden ly. But when we begin to fixinke from his word, not beleeuing it or not expressing it in our lumges: first be doeth send his mel Cengers, the true pleachers of his word, to admonify and warne bs of our butie: that as he for his part, for the great loue he bare buto by, delivered his owne some to suffer death, that wee by his death might be delinered from death, and be reflored to the life eucrlasting, evermore to dwel with him, and to be partakers and inheritours with him, of his everlatting alozie and king Dome of heaven: lo againe, that we for our parts thould walke m a godly life, as becommeth his children to do. And if this wil not ferne, but ftill we remaine disobedient to his word and will, not knowing bim, not louing him, not fearing bim, not putting our mhole

pz

pit

are

Cay

he

the

bn

gre

fü

of falling from God.

is

to cb

OZ

ms

dn D

ull

af

m ice

to

at

at

ug

ep

be

nd

:de

ito

OCS

frő

tn

be

uf

en

na

refs

ente

are

bp

the

ers

ngs

em

not

not

out

ole

mbole truff and confidence in bin: and on the other fibe, to our neighbourg behaving our felues bucharitablie, by difpayne, ennie, malice, 02 by comitting murder, robberie, abulterie, glutto: nie, Deceit, lying, fwearing, oz other like Deteftable workes, and Hebrat. bigodly behautour, then be threatneth by by terrible comints Plalar. nations, tweating in gret anger, b wholoener both thele works, hall never enter into his rell, which is b kingdome of heaven.

The second part of the Sermon of the falling from God. A the former part of this fermon, pet have learned hom many maner of ways men fal fro God: some by idolatrie. Come for lack offaith, some by p neglecting of their neigh bors, some by not hearing of Gods word, some by p pleasure thep take in the banities of worldly things. De have also learned in what milerie man is, which is gone fro God: a how & God pet of his infinit goodnes to cal again man from p his miferie, bleth first getle admonitios by his prechers, after he laieth on terrible threatnings. Pow if this gentle monition athreatning together do not ferue, then God wil thew his terrible coutenance boo bs. he wil power intollerable plagues boo our heads, a after he will take away fro by al his aid a affifface, wherew before he did des fend by fro al luch maner of calamitie. As b Eugelical prophet Clai agreing to Chailes parable, both teach be, faying, That god Elai, t. had made a goodly bineyard for his beloued children: he hedged it, he walled it round about, he planted it with chosen bines, a made a Turret in the middes thereof, and therein also a bine preffe. And when he looked that it fould bring him foorth good graps, it brought forth wild graps: and after it foloweth, Now that I thew you (faith god) what I wil do w my binepard: I wil pluck downe p hedges, it may perilb: I wil break down p bals pit map be trobe bnder foot: I wil let it lie waft, it fhal not becut, it that not be diaged, but briers a thornes that our growe it, a I hal command the clouds that they hall no more rame boon it. By thefe threatnings we are monished a warned, if we which are p chosen binevard of god, bring not forth good graps, p is to lay, good works y may be delectable a pleafant in his light, whe he loketh for the, whe he fendeth his meffegers to cal byo bs for the, but rather bring forth wild graps, pis to fay, fower works, busaucry, a bustuitful: the wil he pluck away al defence, a suffer greuous plaques of famine, battel, derth a death, to light byo bs. finally if thefe ferue not, he wil let be tie walk, he will give be o

uer,be

C 4

### The Second part of the Sermon

he will turne away from be, be will bigge and belue no more as

fo

al

CC

ti

ni

to

th

110

a

go

tu

th

w

fo

CLE

gr

ne

th

ue

De

th

te

m

for

it !

to

be

fba

bo

bp

frō

top

ani

fba

bout be, he will let be alone, and fuffer be to bring foorth even fuch fruite as we will, to bring forth brambles, brees, a thornes, all naughtines, all vice, and that fo abundantly, that they shall cleane ouergrow bs, choke, frangle, and betterly deftroy bs. But they that in this world, live not after God, but after their owne carnall libertie) perceive not this great weath of God towards them, that he will not dig, noz delue any moze about them, that he doeth let them alone even to themselves. But they take this for a great benefite of God, to have all their owne libertie: and so they live, as carnall libertie were the true libertie of the Gofpel. But God forbid (good people) that ever we fould defire fuch libertie. for although God fuffer cometimes the wicked to have their pleasure in this world, pet the ende of bogodly lining is at length endles destruction. The murmuring Israelites had that they longed for, they had Quaples prough, yea, till they were weary of the. But what was the end thereof? Their fweet meat had fowe fauce: enen whiles p meat was in their mouths, the plaque of God lighted byon them, a fodainly they died. So. if we live broodly, and God luffereth be to followe our owne milles, to have our owne delightes a pleasures, a correcteth bs not with some plague: it is no boubt, but be is almost betterly diff pleased with bg. And although he be long ere he ftrike, vet many times when he friketh fuch perfons, hee friketh them at once, for ever. So that when he doth not frike by, when he ceafeth to afflict by, to punish or beat by, a suffreth by to run beadlong into all bugodines, a pleatures of this world by wee delight inwithout punishment a adversitie, it is a dreadfull token that bee loueth bs no longer, that he careth no longer for bs, but hath gi uen be ouer to our owne selves. As long as a man doeth provne his vines, both dig at the rotes, a both lay fresh earth to them, he bath a minde to them, he perceiveth some token of fruitfulnes? may be recourred in them, but when he wil bestow no more such cost and labour about them, then it is a signe that hee thinketh they wil never be good. And the father, as long as he loveth his childe, he loketh angerly, he correcteth him when he doth amille: but when ferueth not, and boon that hee ceaseth from correct tion of him, and suffreth him to doe what he lift himselfe, it is a figure that he intendeth to disinherite him, and to east him away for

Num. rt

of falling from God.

en

eg.

all

Sut

ane

ds lat

his

om

the

lire

oto

ma

ad

hep

eet

hs,

50,

one

bg

Dif

anp

nce.

leth

ona

in,

bee

gis

pne

n,he

est

luch

aeth

his

iffe:

recs

isa

wap

for

So furely nothing (houlde pearce our hearte fo fozes and put be in fuch hourible feare, as when we knowe in our coscience, that wee have greenously offended God, and do so continue, and that pet he ariketh not, but quietly suffereth be in the naughtinelle that we have belight in. Then Gerially it is time Pfal ga. to cry, and to crie againe, as Dauid Did: Caft me not away from the face, and take not away the boly spirit from me. Lorde turne Palis not away the face from me, call not the feruant away indiffica Plates fure. Dide not the face from me, leaft The like buto them that go downe to hel. The which lamentable prayers of him, as they ho certifie by what hourible danger they bein, from whom God turneth his face (for the time, as long as he fo doeth:) fo foould they move and friere by to crie boon God with all our part, that mee may not be brought into that flate, which doubtleffe is fo foromfull, fo miferable, and fo dreadfull, as no tongue can luffic ciently expresse, nor any heart can thinke. for what deadlie greefe map a man suppose it is to be buder the weath of God, to be forfaken of him, to have his boly wirit the authour of al good neffe to bee taken from him, to be brought to fo bile a condition, that he thall be left meete for no better purpole, then to bee tor & ner condemned to bell for not onely fuch places of Dauid Doe hewe, that bopon the turning of Gods face from any persons, they shall be left bare from all goodnesse, and farre from hope of remedie: but also the place rehearsed last before of Esay, Doeth meane the same, which sheweth, that God at length doeth so forfake his bufeuitfull bineparde, that hee will not onely lufter it to bring foorth weedes, bypers, and thornes, but also further to punish the bufruitfulnesse of it. De fairb hee will not cut it, be will not delue it, and be will commaunde the cloudes by they thall not raine bypon it: whereby is fignified the teaching of his holp worde, which Saint Paul, after a like manner, expressed by planting and watering, meaning that he wil take that away tro them, to that they halbe no longer of his kingdome, they hal be no longer gouerned by his holy wirit, they wall be put from the grace and benefites that they had, and ever might have entoped through Christ, they shal be deprined of the beauenly light, and life which they had in Christ, whiles they abode in him: they hall be (as they were once) as men without God in this world, of tather in worle taking. And to be thort, they thalbe given in-

# The second part of the Sermon

1

fi

b

n

ď

ti

ti

h

Û

a

k

ft

tt

fb

fo

m

İt

(i

tt

be

n

bi

tt

bi

O

th

let

lir

bu

tto

hi

in

On

6

3h

to the power of the beufl, which beareth the rule in all them that be call away from God, as he did in Saul and Judas, and gene .Reg. 15. rally in all fuch, as worke after their owne willes, the children of inifitrust and unbeliefe. Let be beware therfore (good Christia people)leaft pwe, refecting or calting away Gods worde (by the which we obtein a retain true faith in God) be not at length caft of to farre, that we become as the children of bubeleefe, which be of two fortes, far dinerte, pea, almost cleane contrarie, and pet both be bery far from returning to God, the one fort, only weigh ing beir finfull and detestable lyuing, with the right indgemet and ftraitneffe of Bods righteonfneffe, be fo without counfaile, and be to comfortleffe (as they all muft needes be from whome the spirite of counsel and comfort is gone) that they will not bee perswaded in their heartes, but that either God can not, or elle that he will not take them againe to his fauour a mercy. The o ther, hearing the louing and large promites of Gods mercie, and To not concerning a right faith thereof, make those promises lar ger then euer God bid, trufting, that although they continue in their finful a detestable lyuing neuer fo long, pet that God at f end of their life, wil thew his mercie boon them, and fthen ther will returne. And both thefe two fortes of men be in a dainnable state, and pet neuerthelesse, God (who willeth not the death of Ezec.18. wicked) hath thewed meanes, whereby both the fame (if they and 33. take heed in featon) may escape. The first, as they do dread gods rightfull tultice in punishing linners (whereby they thoulde be Against Dilinated, and should dispatre in deed, as touching any hope that desperatio map be in them felues) fo if they would constantly or stedfast ly beleeve, that Gods mercy is the remedy appointed against fuch dispaire and distrust, not onely for them, but generally for all that be force and truely repentaunt, and will therwithal frick to Gods mercie, they may be fure they hall obteine mercie, and enter into the port or haven of lafegarde, into the which whole euer both come, be they before time neuer to wicked, they hall be out of danger of enerlasting damnation, as God by Ezechiel Ezec. 3. faith, what time foeuer a finner both returne, and take earnelt true repentance, I will forget all his wickednes. The other, as Against they be readie to beleeve Gods promites, so they should be as to preluptio Die to beleene & threatnings of God: as well they should beleen the law, ag the Gofpel; as well that there is an hell and everla fting

that

gene

lozen

zistiā

w the

b caft

ich be

10 pet

eigh

remet

faile,

home

ot bee

12 else

Cine o:

e,and

g lat

iue m

at t

a they

mable

th of h

aods

ldebe

e that

ofast

ainst

illy for

al stick e, and

pholo:

3echiel

e as to

euerla: Aing

fling fyre, as that there is an beauen, and enerlasting iop : as mell they flould beleene Damnation to beitheatened to the wice ked and entill dooers, as faluation to bee promifed to the faith full in worde and workes, as well they fout de beteene God to be true in the one, as in the other . And the finners that contime in their wicked lining, ought to thinke, that the promites of Gods metcie, and the Golpell, perteine not unto them being in that fate, but onely the lawe, and those scriptures which conterne the weath and indignation of God, and his threatnings, which shoulde certifie them, that as they doe over boldly prefume of Gods mercie, and line diffolutely: to both God ftill moze and more withdra we his mercie from them, and be is to proud ked thereby to wrath at length, that hee bestroyeth such pres fumers many times foudenly. for of fuch Saint Daul laide .. Thef. s. thus, noben they fhall fay it is peace, there is no banger, then hall fodepne destruction come boon them. Let be bewarethere fore of fuch naughtie boldnes to finne: for Bod, which bath promiled his mercie to them that bee truely repentant (although it be at the latter ende) hath not promifed to the prelimptuous finner, either that he thall have longe life, or that hee thall have true repentaunce at the lafte ende. But for that purpole hath hee made eucrie manns beath bncertapne, that hee houlde not put his hope in the end, and in the meane fealon to Gods highe displeature ) line bigodly. meherefoze, let bs followe the countaile of the wife man, let be make no tarrying to turne buto the Lord: let be not put of from Day to Day, for Codaynely hall his wrath come, and in time of bengeance be will deftrope the wicked. Let be therfore turne betimes, and when we turne let be may to God, as Dice teacheth faying, forque all our ofees finnes, receive be gratioufly. And if wee turne to bim with an humble and a berie penitent heart, he will receive be to his fanour and grace for his boly names take, for his promile fake, for his trueth and mercies fake, promifed to all faithfull beleeuers in Jefus Chaifte his onely naturall Sonne: to whome the onely Saulour of the worlde, with the father and the holy Shoft, be all honour, glozie, and power, worlde without ende.

An

## 

a faturation to bee some Ch to the Che

tis not to be marueiled that wouldly men do feare No die: for beath deprineth them of all worldly bo nours, tiches, and possessions, in the fruition where of the worldle man counteth huntelfe happie, to long as he may entope them at his owne pleasure: and otherwife, if he be dispossessed of the same, without hope of reconerie, then be can none otherwise thinke of him selfe, but that he is buhannie, because he hath lost his worldly lov a pleas fire. Alag thinketh this carnali man, fall I nowe depart for ea uet from all my honorg, all my treasure, fro my countrie, friends tiches , pollellions, and wouldly pleasures, which are my lop and harts delight? Alas that ever that day hall come, when althefe I must bid farebel at once, and never to entop any of them after, mberfore it is not without great cause woken of the wife man, D beath, howe bitter and fowne is the remembrance of thee, to a man that lauth in peace and profperitie in his fubftance, to a man lining at case, leading his life after his owne minde with out trouble, and is therewithal well pampered and febbe There be other men, whome this would doeth not fo greatly laugh by pon, but rather bere and oppreffe with pouertie, fickeneffe, or forme other aduertitic, vet they doe feare death, partlie because the field abhorrett naturally his owne forowfull distolution, which beath both threaten buto them, a partly by reason of sickenesses and painefull difeales, which be most frong panques and ago nies in the flelb, and ble commonly to come to licke men before

Although these two causes seeme greate and weightie to a worldly man, wherebypon he is moved to seare death, yet there is an other cause much greater then anye of these afore reheavied, for which in deede he hath sust cause to seare death, and that is, the state and condition whereby no at the last ende death bringeth all them phase their heartes fixed byon this world, without repentance a amedment. This state a conditio is called he cond death, which but al such shall ensue after this bodily death. And this is y death, which in deed ought to be dread and feared:

Death, or at the least accompanie Death, when some it commeth.

fnt

fi

u

p

ti

li

b

D

th

mof

De

co

tp

an

pe

to

m

bp

De

qu

of

ser.

the ple

lon

(ag

18 U

neu

ma

mei Go

### against the feare of death.

Hill

Smi

are

bos

ber:

, 60

ITE:

eof

but

leas

12 64

IDS

and

bele

ter.

an.

, to

to a ith:

here

bps

, 01 the

bich

ffes

ODE fore

eth.

toa

here

rear

that

12 M/s

oith

bles ath.

red:

fot

for it is an everlatting loffe without remedie of the grace and fai nour of 6 D D, and of everlatting iope, pleasure, and felicis And it is not onely the loffe for ever of all thefe eternall pleasures, but also it is the condemnation both of body a soule (without either appellation, or hope of redemption) buto everlafting paines in hell. Tinto this state death fent the bomerciful a the bigodly rich man (that Luke fpeaketh of in his Gofpel) who Luke 16 living in all wealth and pleafure in this world, and cherifbing himselfe dayly with daintie fare and gozgious apparell, dispiled poore Lazarus that lay pitifully at his gate, milerably plagued and full of fores, and also grieuouslie pined with bunger. Both thefe two were arrefted of death, which fent Lazarous & poore miferable man by angels anone buto Abrahams bosome a place of reft, pleature, and confolation: but the bumerrifull rich man descended downe into hell, and being in tormentes, he cried for comfort, complaining of the intollerable paine that he luftered in that flame of fire, but it was to late. So buto this place bodily death sendeth all them that in this worlde have their ione and felicitie, all them that in this worlde bee unfaithful buto God, a bucharitable buto their neighbors, so dring without repentance a hope of Gods mercy. Wherfore it is no maruel, that the worldly man feareth death, for hee bath much more caute to to doe, then he himselfe doeth consider. Thus we see three causes why wouldly men feare death. One, because they shall lose theres The Gro. by their worldly honours, riches, possessions, and at their barts Delites: Another, because of the paineful deseales, and bitter pan seconde. gues, which commonly men fuffer, either before, or at the time of death: but the chiefe cause about al other, is the dread of mis ferable state of eternal damnation both of body and foule, which they feare hall follow, after their departing from the wouldly pleasures of this present life.

for these causes be all mortalimen, (which bee given to the love of this world both in feare, and flate of death, through fin (as p boly Apoltle faith) to long as they live here in this worlde. Heb. 10. But (enerlasting thankes be to almightie God for ever) there is neuer one of all these causes, no noz pet the altogether, that can make a true Chaistian man afrayde to die ( which is the berie 1.Cor.3. member of Chailt, the Temple of the boly Shoft, the forme of 600, and the verie inheritour of the euctlasting kingdome of

### The first part of the Sermon:

n

b

lo

明

n

co

lil

bi

to

ki

th

ft

02

De

th

cá

th

ho

ket

boo

Dea

bs

hin

boil

fau

lice,

op

beauen:) but plainely contrarie, he conceiveth great and mas ny causes budoubtedly grounded byon & infallible & everlasting truth of the word of God, which moueth him not onely to put a: may the feare of bodily death, but also for the manifolde benefits a fingular commodities, which enfue buto every faithfull person by reason of the same, to wishe, befire, and long hartily for it. for death (balbe to bim no death at all, but a berie deliverance from death, from all paines, cares, and foromes, miferies, and wrets chednes of this woulde, a the berie entrie into reft, a a beginning of everlatting joy, a talting of beavenly pleasures, so great, that neither tongue is able to expresse, neither epe to fee, nor eare to heare them:no,noz any earthly mans hart to conceive them. So exceeding great benefites they be, which God our heavenly fas ther by his meere mercie, a for the love of his fonne Jefus Chift, bath laid by in floze, a prepared for them that humbly fubmit the felues to Gods wil, and evermore bufainedly love him from the bottome of their hearts. And we ought to beleeve that death bes ing flaine by Christ, can not beepe any man, that stedfastly true feth in Chaift, buder his perpetuall trannie and lubiection: but that be that rife from Death againe bnto glozie at the laft Day, ap pointed by almightie God, like as Christ our head did rife again, according to Gods appointmet, the third day. for S. Augustine faith, The head going before, the members trult to followe and and S. Daul faith, If Chailt be rifen from the dead, we thall rife also from the same. And to comfort al Christis an perfons berein, holy scripture calleth this bodily death a fleep, wherin mans fenfes be (as it were) taken from him for a feafon, and yet when he awaketh, he is more fresh then he was when he went to bed. So, although we have our foules separated fro our bodies for a leafon, pet at the generall refurrection wee thall bee moze frelh, beautiful, a perfect then we be now. for now we be mortal, then that we be immortall: now infect with diverte infire mities, then clearely boid of all immoztall infirmities: nowe we be subiecte to all carnall desires, then wee mallbee all spiritual, desiring nothing but Gods glozie, a thinges eternall . Thus is this bodily death, a doze or entring buto life, and therefore not lo much dreadfull (if it be rightly confidered) as it is comfortable, not a mifebeefe, but a remedie for all mischeefe, no enemie, but a friende, not a cruell tyzaunt, but a gentle quide, leading by not

against the feare of death.

mas

tina

ut a:

efits

tlon

for

from

prets

ning

that

re to

1.90

fas

brift,

it thể

n the

b bes

tru

r: but

p,ap

gain,

uftine

eand

n the

nilli

deep,

afon,

en be

o out

ll bee

me be

infire oe we

tual, usis

not fo able,

but a ng vs not

not to mortalitie, but to immortalitie, not to lorowe and paine, but to iop and pleasure, and that to endure for ever, if it be thanks fully taken and accepted as gods messenger, and patiently borne of vs for Christes love, that suffered most painefull death for our loue, to redeeme be from death eternall. According bereunto S. Daul faithe, our life is hid with Chaift in God: but when our Rom life thall appeare, then thall we also appeare with him in glozie. poby then thall we feare to die, confidering the manifolde and comfortable promiles of the Golpell, and of holp (criptures: God toba, 6 the father bath given be everlafting life (faith S. John) a this life is in his fonne. De that bath the fonne, bath life, and be that lohn. 6 hath not the son, hath not life. And this I write (saith S. John) to you that beleeve in the name of p sonne of God, that you map know prou have everlafting life, and that you do beleeve boon tohn. 6. the name of the some of God. And our Sautour Chailt faith, De that beleeueth in mee bath life euerlasting, and I will raise him from death to life at the late day: S. Daul alfo faith, Chrifte is ordeined and made of God our righteoulnes, or holines and redemption, to the entent that be which wil glozie, should glozie in the Lord. S. Waul did contene and fet little by all other things, esteming them as dung, which before he had in berie great price, that he might be founde in Christ, to haue euerlasting life, true Golom holines, righteousnes, and redemption. finally, S. Paul mas beth a plaine argument in this wife: If our heavenly father woulde not spare his owne natural sonne, but did give him to death for bs: howe can it be, that with him be shoulde not give bs all thinges? Therfore if wee have Christ, then have we with him, and by him, al good things what foeuer we can in our harts withe or defire, as victorie over death, sinne, and hell: we have p favour of God, peace with him, holines, wifedoin, iuffice, power, life, and redemption, we have by him perpetuall health, wealth, op, and bliffe everlating.

# The second part of the Sermon.

Thath beene heretofore thewed you, that there bee three causes wherfore men do commonly feare beath. fust, the socowfull departing from worldly goods a pleasures. The second, y feare of y panges a paines

The second part of the Sermon

that come with death. Last and principall cause is, the hore's ble feare of extreme miserie, and perpetual damnation in time to come. And yet none of these three causes troubleth good men, because they stay themselves by true faith, perfect charitie, and

Et mq

of the fo

le

b

h

111

to

ci

21

th

in

EL

f

fti

6

b

C

De

ts

fu

an

lp:

T

be

6

CI

(id)

na

41

he

pa

fure hope of the endlelle toy and bliffe euerlasting.
All those therefore have great cause to be full of top, that bee

topned to Chaift with true faith, ftedfaft hope, and perfect charitie, a not to feare beath noz euerlafting Damnation. for Death can not deprine them of Jefu Christ, nor any sinne can condemne them that are graffed furely in him, which is their onely toy, trea fure, and life. Let be repent our finnes, amend our lives, truft in his mercie a latisfaction, a beath can neither take him from bs, noz be from him. for then (as Saint Daul faith ) whether we line or die, we be the Lords owne. And againe he faith, Christ did Die, and role againe, because be shoulde be Lorde both of p Deade Then if we be the Lords owne when we be dead, and quicke. it must needs follow that such tempozal death, not onely cannot harmeis, but also that it shall be much to our profite, and iopne be buto God more perfectly. And thereof the Christian bart may furely be certified by the infallible or budeceineable trueth of ho ly Scripture. It is God (fatth S. Paul) which hath prepared bs buto immoztalitie, a the same is bee which hath given bs an earnest of the spirite. Therefore let bebe alwayes of good com fort, for we know that fo long as we be in the body, we be ( as it were) far fro God in a ftrange countrie, lubiect to many perils, walking without perfite light a knowledge of almightie God, onely feeing him by faith in holy fcriptures. But we have a con rage and delire rather to bee at home with God a our Sautous Chailt, farre from the body, where we may beholde his God head as he is, face to face, to our enerlasting comfort. Thefe be S. Pauls wordes in effect, whereby we may perceive, that the life in this world, is resembled and likened to a pilgrimage in ftrange countrie, far from God, and that beath, Deliuering be from our bodies, doth fend be ftraight home into our owne con trie, and maketh by to dwell prefently with God for euer, int uerlasting rest and quietnes: So that to die, is no lose, but pro fit and winning to al true Christian people. What loft the theeft hanged on the croffe with Christ, by his bodily death yea, how

Heb to

### against the feare of death.

226

unte

nen,

and

t bee

cha

eath

mne

trea

oft in

n bs.

r me

t did

eade

bead.

nnot iopne

may of ho

pared

os an

COM

ast

erils

(50h

a coll antious

(500:

ele bet bat the

gema

ing bs

re con

r, ine

art pro

e theetr

a.how

mud

much did he gaine by it ? Did not our Sauiour fay buto him This day thou halt be with me in Paradife. And Lagarus that pitifull perfon, that laie before the riche mans gate, pained with Lukers. fores, and pyned with hunger, did not death highly profite and promote him, which by the ministerie of Angels sent him buto Abzahams bosome, a place of rest, top, and heanenly consolation Let by thinke none other (good Christian people ) but Christ hath prepared and made ready before, the fame top and felicitie for be, that he prepared for Lazarus and the theefe . 110herefore, let by flicke buto his faluation, and gratious redemption, and beleene his morde, ferue him from our heartes, lone and obes! him, and whatfoener wee have done heretofore contrary to his most holy will, nowe let by repent in time, and hereafter shipp to correct our life: and doubt not, but we wall finde him as merriful buto be, as he was either to Lazarus, or to the theef, whole examples are written in holy Scripture, for the comfort of them that be firmers, and fubiect to forowes, miferies, and calamities in this worlde, that they found not dispaire in Gods mercy, but ener truft therby to have forgivenes of their fins, and life everlafling, as Lazarus and the theefe had. Thus I truft enery Chais flian man perceineth by the infallible or budeceineable worde of God, that bodilp death ean not havine not hinder them that trus ly beleene in Christe, but contrary shall profite and promote the Christian soules, which being truely venitent for their offences, departe hence in perfect charitie, and in fure truft, that & D D is mercifull to them, forgining their linnes, for the merites of Jes his Christ his onely natural fonne.

The feconde cause why some doe feare beath, is fore lickenelle, The fecos and greenous paines, which partly come before beath, and parts cause why ly accompanieth or commeth with Death, when so ever it cometh, some do This feare is the feare of the fraple fleihe, and a naturall paffion feare belonging buto the nature of a mortall man. But true faith in Gods promifes, and regarde of the papies and panges, which Chaift boon the croffe fuffered for by miferable finners, with conliberation of the top weverlasting life to come in beauen, wil mitis gate and affwage leffe those paynes, and moderate or bring into a meane this feare, that it that I never bee able to overthrowe the heartie defire and gladnes that the Christian soule hath to be fer parated from this corrupt body, that it may come to the gratious

fI

prefence

### The second part of the Sermon

presence of our Saniour Jefus Christ: Ifwe beleene stebfastly

6

li

DI

ei

CO

lin

pzi

pa

tot

fich

fati

not

but he o

bed

rob.

fat

Tie

fer t

count lideci

ofthis

lifeto

istob

people

ha fai their g

Therebie

the worde of God, we shall perceine that such bodily sickenesse. pances of death, or whatfoever bolorous pances wee fuffer, eigh ther before or with death, be nothing els in Christian men, but the rod of our heavenly and louing father beherewith he mercis fully correcteth by, either to trie and declare the faith of his par tient children, that they may be found laudable, glorious, and honourable in his fight, when Tefus Christe shalbe ovenly shew ed to be the judge of all the worlde, or els to chastice and amende in them whatfoener offendeth his fatherly and gratious goods nesse, lest they should perishe everlastingly. And this his cov recting rodde, is common to all men that be truely his . Theres fore let be calt away the burden of sinner that lieth too heavie in our neckes, and returne buto & D to frue penamer and as mendement of our lives, let be with patience runne this course that is appointed, fuffering (for his take that died for our fals uation)al foromes and panges of death, and death it felfe tops fully, when God fendethit to bs, having our eies fired and fet fast ever boon the head and Captaine of our faith, Jesus Christ: who (confidering the ione that he should come buto ) cared neps ther for the thame nor paine of death, but willingly conforming and framing his will to his fathers wil, most patiently suffered the most spannefull and painefull death of the cross, being inno cent and harmelelle. And nowe therefore he is eralted in heaven. and enertaltingly litteth on the right hande of the throne of God the father . Let be call to our remembrance therefore the life and joves of heaven, that are kept for all them that patiently Doe lufter here with Chailte, and confider that Chailte luftered all his pamefall pattion by finners, and for finners: and then we shall with patience, and the more easily suffer such forower and paines, when they come. Let us not let at light the chastifing of the Lorde, nor acudae at hun, nor fall from hun, when of hun we be corrected: for the Lorde loneth them whome hee doeth cov rect, and beateth enery one whome hee taketh to his childe. Minat childe is that (faith Saint Baul) whome the father los ueth, and voeth not chaffice . If pee bee without Gods cou rection ( which all his welbeloued and true children haue) then bee you but bastardes, finally regarded of DD, and not his true children, a man di sa habaday di sa galamat

Die.

Phili.a.

Hebr.12

SHISH

## against the feare of death.

è.

13

ut

Cita

au.

dr

200

De

OD

023

real

in

35

rfe.

als

00%

fet

tft:

ep:

ing

red

110 ten,

FOD

the ntly

ered

me

and

g of

me

cou

ilde.

clos

CO14

aue)

not

core:

Therefore feeing that when we have in earth our carnall fas there to be our correctours, we doe feare them, and reverently take their correction: shall we not much more be in subjection to God our wiritualifather, by whome wee thall have everlafting life . And our carnall fathers fometime correct be even as it pleafeth them, without cauferbut this father full by correcteth be. either for our finne, to the intent wee fould amende, or for our commoditie and wealth to make by thereby partakers of his hos lineffe. furthermoze, all correction which God fendeth be in this mefent time, feeme th to have no iop and comfort, but forome and paine, vet it bringeth with it a talte of Gods mercy and goodnes, tomards them that be fo corrected, and a fure hope of Gods everlafting confolation in heaven. If then thefe forower, difeafer, and fickneiles, and also death it felte, be nothing els but our heavente fathers rod, whereby he certifieth be of his love and gratious fanour, whereby he trieth and purifieth bs, whereby hee giveth buto be holphelle, and certifieth be that we be his children, and be our mercifoll father: hall not we then with all humilitie, as o bedient and louing children, topfully kille our heavenly fathers rod, and euer fap in our heart, with our Sauiour Jefus Chrifte, father, if this annuily and forow which I feele, and beath which Tee approch may not paffe, but that the will is that I must ful fer them, the wil be done.

#### The third part of the Sermon of the feare of death.

A this Sermon against the feare of death, two cans les were declared, which commonly mouse worldip men to be in much feare to die, and pet the fame bo nos thing trouble the faithfull a good liners when death commetly, but rather giveth them occasion greatly to reinice, conlidering that they chalbe belinered from the fozowe and mileric of this world, and be brought to the great iop and felicitie of the cause why life to come. Pow the third and speciali cause why death in deed death is to is to be feared, is the milerable flate of the wouldly and broodly be feared, people after their death: but this is no cause at all, why the god pafaithfull people frould feare death, but rather contrary wife, their godly connertation in this life, a beeleefe in Christ, cleaning

continualiy

### The third part of the Sermon

continually to his mercies, should make them to long fore after

b

T

ti

fi

h

Ŕ

Ít

Ô

pi

3

tt

ui

pi

po

ar

tr

th

a

A

pe

tto

mó

bn

hoi

1110

the

an

hai

led

mt

the

that life, that remaineth for them budoubtedly after this bodily Death. Of this immortall state, after this transitorie life, where mee shall line enermore, in the prefence of & D, in iop, and reft, after victorie oner all fichenelle, foroweg, finne, and beath: there bee many, both playne places ofholy Scripture, intich confirme the weake conscience against the feare of all such dos lours, siekenesses, sinne, and bodily death, to as wage such treme bling and bagodly feare, and to encourage by with comfort and hope of a bleffed frate after this life. Saint Paul witheth buto the Ephelians, that & D D the father of close woulde give buto them the Spirite of wifedome and genelation, that the eyes of their heartes might give life to knowe him, and to perceine howe great thinges he had called them buto, and home riche inheritaunce he hath prepared, after this life, for them that pertaine onto him . And Saint Paul hunselfe declareth the Defire of his hearte, which was, to be distoluted and loosed from his body, and to bee with Christe, which ( as hee faide ) was much better for him, although to them it was more necessarie that he hould live, which he refused not, for their fakes . Even like as Saint Martin faid, Good Lorde, if I be necessarie for thy people ple to do good buto them, I wil refule no labour: but els for mine owne felfe. I befeeche thee to take my foule.

Dowe the holy fathers of the olde lawe, and all faithfull and rionteous men, which departed before our Sautour Christes af cention into heaven, did by death depart from troubles buto reft. from the handes of their enimies, into the handes of & D. from forows and fickneffes, buto iopfull refreshing in Abrahams before, a place of all comfort and confolation, as the Scriptures Do plainely by manifest wordes testifie. The booke of wifedome faith, that the righteous mens foules be in the hand of God, and no townent shall touche them. They feemed to the eyes of foolin men to die, and their death was counted miserable, and their departing out of this would wretched, but they be in rest. And an other place farth, That the righteous thall live for ever, and their rewarde is with the Lord, and their mindes be with God, who is about all therefore they shall receive a glorious king doin and a beautifull crowne at the Lords hand. And in an other place o same book saith, The righteous, though be bee prevented with

.

Phil.r.

Ephel.1.

Sapi. 3.

Sapi.4.

### against the feare of death.

after

ndilp

here

, and

eath:

nt ch

00°

reme

nfort

sheth

oulde

at the

pers

owe

that

in the

from

mas

Marie

n like

p peos

anune

II and

es al

o rest.

DD.

hams

tures

Doing

, and

dilloor

their

ind an

, and

(50d)

king

other

lented

with

with fodaine death, nevertheleffe be thalbe there where he fbalbe refreibed. Of Abrahams bosome, Christes wordes be so plaine, that a Christian man needeth no more proofe of it . Dow then, if this were the state of the holp fathers and righteous men, before the comming of our Saujour, and before he was glorified? howe much moze then ought all we to have a ftebfaft faith, and a fure hope of this bleffed frate and condition, after our death , fees ing that our Saujour now bath perfourmed the whole work of our redemption, and is glozioully ascended into heaven, to pres pare our dwelling places with him, and faide buto his father, father, I will that where I am, my feruauntes shalbee with mee. And we knowe, that whatfoever Chifte will, his father will the fame, wherefore it can not bee, but if wee bee his farthfull fers uants, our foules halbe with him, after our departing out of this mefent life. Saint Steuen when he was ftoned to death, euen in the middelt of his tormentes, what was his minde most be pon-when he was full of the holy Chofte (faith holy Scripture) having his eies lifted by into heaven, hee fawe the glozy of God, and Telus flanding on the right hande of 6000. The which trueth, after he had confessed boldly before the enemies of Christ, they drue him out of the Citie, and there they stoned him, who cried buto & D. faving, Lord Tefu Chrifte, take my Spirite. And Doeth not our Saufour fay plainly in Saint Johns Gol John pel, Clerily, berily I fay buto you. De that heareth iny word, and beleeneth on him that fent me, hath everlasting life, and commeth not into indocument, but shall passe from beath to life, Shall mee not then thinke that death to be pretious, by the which we paste buto life.

Therefore it is a true faying of the Prophet, The death of the Palais, holy and righteous men, is pretious in the Lords light. Holy Sismeon, after that he had his hearts defire in feeing our Sautour, that he ener longed for his life, he embraced, and tooke him in his armes, and faid, Aow Lord, let me depart in peace, for mine eies Luke 4-have beholden that fautour, which y half prepared for al nations.

It is trueth therefore, that the death of the righteous is called peace, and the benefite of the Lorde, as the Churche faith in the name of the righteous departed out of this worlde: My foule turne thee to the reft, for the Lorde hath beene good to thee, and rewarded thee. And we fee by holy Scripture, and

# The third part of the Sermon

righteous, ever fince Christs ascension, or going by, in their death did not doubt, but that they went to Christe in Spirit, which is our life, health, wealth, and salvation. John in his holy is ever lation, saw an hundred and rivii. thousands birgins and innocentes, of whome he said, These follows the lambe Jesu Christe wheresoever he goeth. And shortly after in the same place hee saith, I heard a voice from heaven, saying who me, Write, happy and blessed are the dead, which die in the Lord: from hencesouth (swelp saith the spirit) they shall rest from their paines a labours, for their workes doe follows them: so that then they shall reape with iop and comfort, that which they sowed with labours and paines.

They that sowe in the spirit, of the spirit shal reape everlasting.

Galat 6. Mat.6.

Apo.14.

fames.5.

Lake. 16

life. Let be therefore never be wearie of well boing, for when the time of reaping or reward commeth, we shall reape without any wearinesse enertasting iop. Therefore while we have time ( as S. Paul exhorteth by let by doe good to all men, and not lap by our treasures in earth, where rust and mothes corrupt it, which ruft (as Saint James faith) Wall beare witnes against bs at the great day, condemn be, and thall (like most burning fire) tounent our flelb. Let by beware therfore (as we tender our own welth) that were bee not in the number of those miserable, couetous, and weetched men, which S. James biddeth mourne and lament for their greedy gathering, a bugodly keeping of goods. Let by be wife in time, and learne to follow the wife erample of the wicked Steward. Let be fo wifely order our goods a possessions, com mitted buto be here by God for a feafon, that we may truly heare and obey this commandement of our Sautour Chailt: I fay but to you (faith hee) make you friends of the wicked Mammon, that they may receive you into everlaiting tabernacles, or dwellings. Riches be called wicked, because the world abuseth them buto al wickednes, which are otherwise the good gifts of God, and the instruments whereby Gods servants doe truely ferue him in be fing of the same . Dee commanded them not to make them riche friends, to get high dignities and worldly promotions, to give great gifts to rich men that have no need thereof, but to make the friends of poore and miferable men, buto whom, what foeuer they gine, Chaift taketh it as ginen to himselfe. And to these friendes Christ

b

fi

fi

t

0

i

# against the feare of death.

Christ in the Gospel giveth so great honour and preheminence. that he faith, They shall receive them that Do good buto them into everlasting houses not that men shalbe our rewarders for our mel Doing, but that Christ wil reward by and take it to be done

buto himselfe, whatsoever is done to such friends.

mo

ath

his

1125

no

eifte

hee

מטם

02th

urg,

ape

and

tina

1 the

anp

(as

n bp

hich

t the

nent

elth)

, and

nt for

og be

icked

come peare

भाव व

that

ings.

ntoal

ed the

ein be

riche

aine

ke the

rther

endes

Christ

Thus making poore wretches our friendes, wee make our Saujour Chaift our friend, whose members they are: whose miferie, as he taketh for his owne miferie, fo their releefe, fuccour, and help, he taketh for his fuccour, releefe, and helpe, and will as much thank be and reward be for our goodnes thewed to them. as if he himselfe had received like benefite at our handes, as hee mitnelleth in the Golpel faving. Mhatfoeuer ve haue done to any of thefe fimple persons, which do beleene in me, that have ve done Marse. to mee felfe. Ther fore let be diligently forefee, that our faith and hope which wee have conceived in Ilmighty & D D, and in our Saujour Christe ware not faint, nor that the love which wee beare in hande to beare to him, ware not colde t but let be dudp dayly and diligently to thew our felues to be the true honourers and louers of God, by keeping of his commandements, by boing of good deedes buto our needie neighbours, releeving by all meanes that we can, their powertie with our aboundance and and plentie, their ignorance with our wisedome and learning, and comfort their weakenes with our ftrength and authoritie. calling all men back from entil boing by godly countaite and good erample, perfeuering still in well boing, to long as we live: so that me not neede to feare death for any of those three causes afore mentioned not vet for any other cause that can bee immagined: but contrary, confidering the manifolde ficknesses, troubles, and followes of this prefent life, the dangers of this perilous polaris mage, and the great encumbrance which our Spirite hath by his finfull field a fraile body subject to death: considering also the mas nifold folows a dangerous deceits of this woulde on every fide, the intollerable pride conetonfuelle, and lecherie, in time of profe peritie, the impatient immuning of them that be wouldly, in time of aductlitie, which cease not to withdraw a pluck by from God,our Sauiour Chrifte, from our life , wealth , oz euerlafting top and faluation: confidering also the immunerable affaultes of our gholdly enimie the denill, with all his fierie darts of ambitio, papoe, lechery, baine gloap, enuie, malice, Detractio, or backbiting, mith

g.Pet.c.

### The third part of the Sermon

with other his innumerable deceites, engines, and fnares. whereby he goeth bufily about to catche all men boder his bomis nion, ever like a roaring Lion, by all meanes fearthing whome he may denoure. The faithfull Christian man which consider reth all these miseries, perils, and incommodities (whereunto he is fubiect fo long as he here lineth boon earth ) and on the other part, confidereth that bleffed and coinfortable state of the hear nenly life to come, and the Overte condition of them that depart in the Lorde, how they are belinered from the continuall encume brances of their mortall and fumefull body, from all the malice, craftes, and deceits of this worlde, from all the affaultes of their aboffly enimie the denil, to line in peace, reft, and endles quietnes, to line in the fellowship of innumerable Angels, and with the congregation of perfecte iuft men, as Patriarkes, Pophetes. Martyrs, and Confessours, and finally, buto the presence of all mightie God, and our Sautour Jelus Chrifte. Dee that doeth confider all thefe things, a beleeueth them affuredly, as they are to be beleened, even from the bottome of his heart, being establis thed in God in this true faith having a quiet confcience in Chaift, a frame hope, and affured truft in Gods mercie, through the mes rites of Jefu Chaifte to obteine this quietnes, reft, and everlas fting iop, thall not onely be without feare of bodily death, when it commeth, but certainely (as \$.10 aul did) to thall he gladly, (ac cording to Gods will, and when it pleaseth God to call him out of this life) areatly delice in his heart, that he may be rid from all these occasions of enill, and line ener to Gods pleasure, in perfect obedience of his will, with our Sauiour Jefus Chaift, to whole gratious prefence the Lord of his infinite mercy and grace bring ps, to raigne with him in life everlatting: to whome with our heavenly father, and the holy Shofte, be glo: p in worldes with out ende.Ainen.

Philip.1.

# 10 An exhortation concerning good

order, and obedience to Ruleis.



A mightie God hath created a appointed al things in heaven, earth, and waters, in a most erceilent and perfect order. In Heaven, hee hath appointed diffinct and severall orders a states of Archangels

and,

an

ne

bo

ap.

5

010

wi

the

bot

der

ber

ene

app

Dea

and

fath

and

lauit

no b

or la

abul

fion

Jud

goet

house

potte

must

God .

to fee

webi

in thi

ponor

### of obedience.

g, 1is

mè

he

ec

80

ırt

m

ce.

eir

s, he

g,

al

th

nte

ift,

la

en

acout

all

ofe

ina

th

1005

and

ted.

reis and

and Angells . In earth heehath affigned and appointed kings, princes, with other governours buder them, in all good and necessarie order . The water abone is kept, and raineth Downe in Due time and feafon. The Sunne, Boone, Starres, Raine bowe, Thunder, Lightning, Cloudes, and all birdes of the anie Doe keepe their order . The Carth, Trees Seedes . Dlants. Bearbes, Corne, Graffe, and all maner of Beaftes heepe them felnes in order : all the partes of the whole peace, as Winter, Summer , Monethes , Rightes and Daves , continue in their order: all kindes of filbes in the Sea . Riners, and Waters, with all fountaines, Springes, pea, the Seas thanfelues keepe their comely course a order: a man himself also bath al his parts both within and without, as foule, heart, minde, memorie, bu berfranding, reason, speech, with all and fingular corporal mens berg of his body, in a profitable, necessarie, and pleasant order :: enery bearee of people in their bocation, calling and office, bath appointed to them their buetie and order : forme are in high bearce, forme in lowe, forme kinges and princes, forme inferiours and fubiectes, prieftes, and lay men, maifters, and fecuantes, fathers, and children, bulbandes and wines, riche and poore, and everie one have neede of other, to that in all thinges is to be lauded and praised the goodly order of God, without the which, no house, no citie, no commonwelth can continue and endure, or lafte. for where there is no right order, there reigneth all abuse, carnall libertie, enormitie, sinne, and Babylonical confus Take away kinges Princes , Rulers, Magiftrates, Judges, and fuch effates of Gods order, no man hall ride or goe by the high way burobbed, no man Chall fleepe in his owne house or bedde brikitled, no man shall keepe his wife, children, and possessions in quietnesse, all thinges walbe common, and there must needes followe all mischiefe, and otter bestruction both of foules, bodyes, goods, and common wealthes. But bleffed bee 600, that we in this Realine of Englande, feele not the horrible calamities, miferies, and wretchednes, which al they budoubted ly feete a fuffer, that lacke this godly order : a praised be God, that we know the great excellent benifite of God hewed towards bs in this behalfe. God hath fent by his high gift, our most deare Soueraigne Lady Queene Clizabeth, with a godly, wife, and honourable counsel, with other superiours and infectionus, in a beautifults

John.19.

Sapi.6.

Sapi.6.

# The first part of the Sermon

of?

fen

ten

w

ŒΟ

m

pu

ob

1116

TIL

iul bli

m

01

po be

er,

ag

110

tho

tho

me

ret

bet

not

eue

leri

tha

CIII

inc

poi

ag

60

dei

ani

den dueties, giving hearty thankes to God, and praying for the preferuation of this godly order. Let be al obey even from the bottome of our heartes, al their godly proceedinges, lawes, flas tutes, proclamations, and infunctions, with all other godly orders. Let be consider the Scriptures of the holy ahost, which perswade and command by all obediently to be subject, first and chiefly to the Queenes Maiestie, supreme gouernour ouer all, and the next to her honozable counsel, and to all other noble men, Magistrates, and officers, which by Gods goodnes, be placed and ordered: for almightie God is the onely author and prouv der for this forenamed frate and order, as it is written of God, in the booke of the Pronerbes : Thorow me kings doe raigne, thorowe me counsellers make tuft lames, thorowe me boe prins ces beare rule, and al indges of the earth execute indgement, 3 am louing to them that love me. Here let be marke well, and re member that the high power and authoritie of kinges, with their making of lawes, indgements and offices, are the ordinances not ofman, but of God: land therefore is this worde (through me) fo many times repeated. Here is also well to be considered and remembred, that this good order is appointed of Gods wif dome, fauour, and love, especially for them that love God, and therefore he faith, I love them that love me . Also in the book of wifedome we may enidently learne, that a kinges power, an thoutie, and frength, is a great benifite of God, given of his great mercie, to the comfort of our great milerie. for thus we read there spoken to kinges , Heare D pe kinges, and buderstand, learne pe that bee indges of the endes of the earth, give earen that rule the multitudes : for the power given pou of the Lord, and the strength, from the highest . Let by learne also here by the infallible and undecemeable worde of God, that kinges and other supreme and higher officers, are ordeined of God, whois most highest: and therefore they are here taught diligently to ap ply and give themselves to knowledge and wisedome, near

farie for the ordering of Gods people to their governance com

mitted, or whome to governe they are charged of God. And they

be here also taught by almighty God, that they should reknow

ledge theinselnes to have all their power and firength not from

Bome, but immediatly of God most highest. We read in the book

### of obedience.

mm

fnt

the

fla

oblu

hich

and

all,

nen,

aced

MILLO

50d, gne,

prins

t,3

id te

their

mces

ough

dered

diw z

, and

books

r, aw

great

reade

tand,

aren

Lozde.

ere by

es and

phois

toap

mecel

e com

of the

nowe

t from

boost

of Deuteronomie, that all punishment pertaineth to God, by this Deut. 13 fentence. Clengeance is mine, and I will remarde. But this fens tence we must buderstande to perteine also buto the magistrates which doe exercise Gods roome in judgement, and punishing by good and godly lawes, here in earth . And the places of feriptime, which feeme to remoone from among al christian men, indgemet, punishmet, or killing, ought to be understand, that no man ( of his owne prinate authority) may be indee ouer other, may punilb, or may kill. But we must refer all indgement to God, to kings, and miers. Judges buder them, which be Gods officers to execute inflice, and by plaine words offeripture, have their authority and be of the fword graunted from God as we are taught by Saint Daul, that Deare and chosen Apostle of our fautour Christ, whom we ought diligently to obey, even as we would obey our Savior Chilf if he were present. Thus S. Daul writeth to p Romanes, Let every foule submit hunselfe buto the authority of the higher powers, for there is no power but of God. The powers that be, be ordained of God. Who so ever therefore with standeth the power er, withstandeth the ordinance of God cout they that refisher are against it, shall receive to themselves Danmation .. for rulers are not fearful to them that doe good, but to them that do entil. Milte thou be without feare of that power- Doe well then, and so that thou be praised of the same, for he is the minister of God, for the wealth. But a if thou doe that which is euil, then feare, for he bear rethnot the fword for naught, for he is the minister of God, to take bengeance on him that doth enil . Wherefore pe must needes obep not onely for feare of bengeance, but also, because of coscience, and even for this cause pay pe tribute, for they are Gods ministers, feruing for the fame purpole.

Here let vs learne of Saint Paule the chosen bestell of God, that all persons having soules (hee excepteth none, not excepteth none, not excepteth none, not excepteth none, neyther Prieste, Ipolise, not Prophet saith Saint Chrysostome) doe owe of bounden duetie, and even inconscience, obedience, submission, and subjection to the high powers, which bee set in authoritie by GOD, for as much; as they bee GOD So Lieuetenantes, Gods Presidentes, Gods Officers, Gods Commissioners, Gods Judges, or deined of God him selfe, of whom onely they have all their power, and all their authority. And the same Saint Paule threatnests

-

### The second part of the Sermon

no lest paine, then everlatting bammation to all disobedient persons, to al resisters against this generall, a common authoritie, for as much as they resist not man, but God, not mans devise and invention, but Gods wisedome, Gods order, power, and authoritie.

# The Second part of the Sermon.

E A

oi fi

to

po

th

lo

w

明

m

uit

no

ing

Dr as much as God hath created and disposed all thinges in a comely order, we have beene taught in the first part of the Sermon , concerning good order and obedience, that we also ought in all common weales, to observe and keepe a due order, and to be obedient to the powers, their ordinances, and lawes, and that all rulers are appointed of God, for a goodly order to be kept in the world: and also how the magistrates ought to learne how to rule and gouerne according to Gods lawes: and that all fub iectes are bound to ober them as Gods ministers, rea, although they be euill, not onely for feare, but also for conscience sake. And here (good people) let be all marke diligently, that it is not law ful for inferiors and subjectes, in any case to relist a stand against the Superiour powers : for Saint Paules wordes be plaine, that who to ever withstandeth, shall get to them selves dainnation: for who so ever withstandeth, withstandeth the ordinaunce of OD D. Dur Sauiour Christ himselfe, and his Apostles, received many and divers invities of the bufaithfull and wie ked men in authoritie : pet wee never reade, that they, or a np of them, caused any sedition or rebellion against authoritie. We reade ofte, that they patiently fuffered all troubles, berati ons, flaunders, panges, and paines, and beath it felfe obedient ip without tunult or relistance. They committed their cause to him that indgeth righteoully, and prayed for their enimies har tily and earnestly. They knewe that the authority of the pow ers, was Gods ordinamice, and therfore both in their words and deedes, they taught ever obedience to it, and never taught no Did the contrarie. The wicked Judge Wilate, faide to Chrifts, knowed thou not that I have power to crucific thee, and have power also to lose thee, Jehis answered, Thou couldest have no power

### of obedience.

Det#

for

and

aw

o all

uaht

door

emo:

and

and

bept

how

fub!

ouah

Ind

lam

ainft

that ion:

ce of

Hes.

mic

02 8

zitie. rati

nients use to

hat

mom

s and

it not

nzifte, hane

meno owa nother at al against me, ercept it were gine thee fro about. Where ho Chaift faught by plainely. Deven the wieked rulers have their nower and authoritie from God, and therefore it is not lamfull for their fubiectes to withfrande them, although they abuse their nower: much leffe then it is lawfull for subjectes, to withstande their godly and Christian Princes, which doe not abuse their aus thoutie, but ble the fame to Gods glozp, and to the profite a come modify of Gods people. The holy Apollie Betst commandeth 1.Pet.3. fernants to be obedient to their maifters, not only if they be good and gentle, but also if they be cuill and frowarde: aftirming that the bocation and calling of Gods people is to be patient, and of the fuffering fides. And there he bringeth in the patience of our Samour Chailt, to persuade obedience to governours, pea, als though they be wicked and wrong doers . But let be now heare Saint Deter himfelfe fpeake, for his wordes certifie best out . Petas. conscience. Thus he bettereth them in his first Episte, Servants, obey your maillers with feare, not onely if they be good and gens tle, but also if they be frowarde. for it is thanke worthie, if a man for conscience, towarde God, endureth greefe, and fuffer wrong, budeferued: for what waife is it, when pe bee beaten for your faultes, if ye take it patiently , but when ye doe well, if you then fuffer wrong, a take it patiently, then is there cause to have thanke of God, for hereunto, berilp were peralled : for fo bid. Cinift fuffer for by, leaning by an example, that we founde fol lowe his steps. All these be the very wordes of Saint Deter. Saint Dauid alfo teacheth be a good lellon in this behalfe, who was many tymes most cruellie a wrongfully persecuted of king 1.Reg. 18.2. Saul, and many tymes also put in leopardie and danger of his 19.20. lyfe by kyng Saul and his people, pet he nepther withstoode, neither bled any force or violence against king Saul his mortal a deadly enimic, but did ever to his liege Lord and Maifter king Saul, most true, most diligent, and most faithfull service; Info much that when the Lorde God had given king Saul into Da mos handes in his owne Cauc, he would not burt him, when he wight without all bodily peril eafily have flaine him, no be would : not lufter any ofhis fernants once to lap their hande, bypon king Saul, but prayed to God in this wife, Lorde keepe me from do ing that thing buto my maister, the Lordes annomited, keepe me that I lay not my hande boon him, feeing he is the annointed of.

the:

### The second part of the Sermon the Lord for as truck as the Lord lineth (except the Lord finite

him, or except his Dap come, or that he goe downe to war, a perilb

in battaile) the Lord be merciful onto me, that I lay not my hand

bpo the Lords annointed . And p David might have killed his es

of

ar

in

bp

Bu

fm

tio

ef

60

DO

thi

fen

uid

hai

to

cro

bpc

Di

ath

and

afra

bin

mel

obo

tha

OII

and

reli

thei

Deir

Dear

The

dip

tom

mimie king Saulit is enidetly proued in the first book of b kings, both by the cutting off the lap of Saules garment, a also by plame confession of king Saul. Also another time, as is metioned in the same booke, when the most bumercifull and most bukinde king Saul did persecute poore Dauid, God did againe gine king Saul into Dauids handes, by calling of king Saule and his whole army into a dead acepe, so that David, and one Ibisai with hun, came in the night into Sauls hoft, where Saul lay Geeping, and his fpeare fracke in the ground at his head; then faid Abifai buto Danid, God hath delinered thine enimie into the handes at this time, nowe therfore let me finite bim once with iny speare to the earth, and I wil not finite him againe the fecond time: meas ning thereby to have killed him with one ftroke, and to have made himfure for ener. And Pauid anfwered a faid to Abifai, des ftrop him not , for who can lave his hands on the Lords annoing ted , and be gilteleffe - And Dauid faide furthermore , As fure, as the Lorde liveth, the Lorde Chall finite him, or his day Chall come to die, or he shall bescende or goe downe into battaile, and there periff, the Lorde keepe me from laying my hands byon the Lords anuointed . But take thou nowe the speare that is at his head, and the cruse of water, and let be goe : and so be did . Here is enidently proned that we may not withftand, nor in any wife burt an anointed king, which is Gods lieftenant, bice gerent, and highest minister in that countrie where he is king. But par adventure forme here would fay, that David in his owne defence An obiec-might have killed king Saul lawefully, and with a fafe confid ence . But holy David did know that he might in no wife with frande, burt, oz kill his foueraigne lozd and king : he did knowe that he was but king Saules subiecte, though he were in great fauour, with God, and his enimie king Saul out of Gods fauor Therefore though he were never fo much pronoked, pet hee refu fed bitterly to hurt the Lordes annointed, he durit not for offen Ding God and his owne confcience (although he had occasion and oportunitie) once lay his hands boon Gods high officer the king, who he did know to be a person reserved a kepf (for his office sake) OTH

tion.

Anan-Iwere.

# of obedience moss | sd I

ite

ilh md

3 CA

gs,

erre

the

ing

ing

his

vith

ing

bifai

ides

eare

mea

haue

ui, Des

noth

fure

Chall

, and

on the

at his

Dett

p wife

rerent,

onely to Gods punishment a subgement. Therefore he property for ofte, and so earnestly, that he lap not his handes upon the Loids! annointed. And by there two examples, S. Dauld being named Pfal. 88. in scripture a man after Gods owne heart gineth a general rule and lefton to all fubicates in the woulde, not to withfand their liegelord and king, not to take a fword by their plinate authority against their king, Gods announted, who ondy beareth the fword by Gods authority for the maintenance of the good, and for the punishment of the euit, who onely by Gods law bath the vie of p fworde at his commandement, and also bath all power, intifoies tion, regunent, correction and punishmont, as suprome gonernous efal his Bealmes a Domintons, a that even by the authority of God, and by Gods ordinances. Det an other notable flory and doctrine is in the fecond booke of the kings, that maketh also for this purpole. When an Amalekite, by king Saules owne con . Reg. s. fent and commandement, had killed king Sant, he went to Da uid, supposing to have had great thankes for his inestage that he had killed Danids beadly enime, a therfore he made great halte to fell to Dauid the chaunce , bringing with him kinge Sauls crowne that was boon his head, and his bracelet that was bpon his arme, to persmade his tidinges to be true. But godly Danid was fo farre from reiopeing at thefe newes, that immedia atly and foorthwith he rent his clothes of his backe, he mourned and wept, and faid to the mellenger, how is it that thou walt not affaide to lay thy handes on the Lordes anomitted to destroye him . And by and by Dauid made one of his fernantes to kill the mellenger, laying, Thy blood bee on thine owne head, for thy ownemouth hath tellified and witnessed against thre, graunting ut par that thou half flaine the Lords announted. Thefe examples being defence fomanifest and evident, it is an intollerable ignozance, madnes, confai and wichednes for subjectes to make any muringring, rebellion, with relifiance, or withstanding, commotion, or insurrection, against knowe their most beare and most bread sourraigne torbe and bing, or n great beined and appointed of Gods goodnelle for their commodity, fauor. peace, and quietnesse. Det let bs beleeue bindoubtedly, (good ee refiv Chillian people) that we may not over Kinges Magistrates, or 2 offendion and my other, (though they bee our obone fathers) if they woulde punnand ha to bee any thing contrarie to Gods commandes ne king, unts. In fuch a case we ought to say with the Apostle, we must icefake) ra ber: OTH

## The second part of the Sermon

ti

tt

þį

ta (t

lp

mp of

pe

tri

# O

fut full ma lp t

fol

ani

eno

ner

are

mon

gain

ratt

10 ha

not

fliar

offa

gain

ting

rather obey God then man. But neverthelesse in that case we may not in any wife withfland biolently, or rebell against rulers, or make any influrrection, fedition, or tunultes, either by force of armes (or otherwise) against the annointed of the Lorde, or any of his appointed officers: But we must in such case patiently sub fer all wrongs, and injuries, referring the indgement of our cause onely to God . Let be feare the terrible punishment of almighty God against traytors and rebellious persons, by the example of Choze, Dathan, and Abiron, which repugned and grudged a gainst Gods Magistrates and officers, and therefore the earth opened and fmallowed them by aline . Other for their wicked murinuring and rebellion, were by a fodaine fire fent of God, btterly confinned . Other for their frowarde behauiour to their ru lers and governours, God ministers, were fodenly striken with a foul lemolie. Other were flinged to death, with wonderful ftrang fierie ferpents. Other were fore plagued, to that there was his led in one day, the number of fourteene thousand and seven bury Deed, for rebellion against them whome God had appointed to bee 2.Reg. 13. in authority . Abfolon alfo rebelling against his father Bing Da uid, was punished with a strange and notable death.

The third part of the Sermon

Chane heard before in this Sermon of good order aobedience, manifeltip proned both by p feriptures and examples, that all fubiectes are bounden too by their magistrates, and for no cause to relist, or withftand, oz rebell, oz make any fedition againf them, pea, although they be wicked men. And let no man think that he can escape bupunished, that committeth treason, compi racie, or rebellie, against his soueraigne Lord the king, though he comit the fame never to fecretly, either in thought, word, or deede, neuer fo privile, in his privile chamber by himfelfe, or openly com ammicating, and confulting with other . for treason will not be hid, treason will out at length : God will have that most detella ble vice both opened and punished, for that it is so directly against his ordinance, and against his high principall inoge, and annoise ted, in earth. The biolence and inturie that is comitted again mitt

### of obedience.

nav

, Ot

e of

ann

fuf

ause

ripty

de of

da

arth

cked

d.bt-

rriv

itha

rang

s bil

bun

o bee

Da

order

truces

1 100

ft , 01

gaint

think

OUTION

nain he

deede,

o com

not be

etellar

igains

RHOW

again

mitt

authorifie, is committed against God, the common weale, and the whole Bealine, which God will have knowen, and condingly or morthily punished one way or other. for it is notably written Ecclese of the wife man in Scripture, in the booke called Ecclefiaftes: with the king no euill in the thought, not speake no burt of him in the privile chamber: for the bird of b aire shall be tray the boice. and with her fethers shall bewrap the words. These lessons and eramples are written for our learning. Therefore let be al feare the most Detestable vice of rebellio ever knowing a remembring. that he that relifteth or withflandeth common authoritie, relifts eth or withstandeth God and his ordinance as it may be proued by many other moe places of holy Scripture. And here let be take beed that we biderstand not these or such other like places (which to straitly command obedience to superiors, and so straits by punished rebellion. a disobedience to the same to be meant in a ny condition of the pretented or coloured power of the Bylhope of Rome. For truly the Scripture of God alloweth no fuch blurs ped power, ful of enormities, abusions, and blasphemies. But the true meaning of these and such places, bee to extoll and set footh Gods true ordinance, and the authoritie of Gods anointed kings, a of their officers appointed under them. And concerning the be furped power of the Bylhope of Bome, which hee most wrongs fully challengeth, as the successour of Christe and Deter: we may easily perceive howefalle, faigned, and forged it is, not one win that it has b no sufficient arounde in holy Scripture, but als lo by the fruites and doctrine thereof. for our Saujour Christ, and Saint Deter, teacheth most earnestly and agreeably obedis ence to kinges, as to the chiefe and supreme rulers in this world, nert boder God: but the Bolhop of Rome teacheth, that they that are boder him, are free from all burdens and charges of the come mon wealth, a obedience toward their Prince, most clearely as gainst Christs doctrine and Saint Deters. De ought therefore rather to be called Antichrift and the fuccessour of the Seribes a Pharifes, then Christs vicar, or S. Deters successour: seing that not onely in this point, but also in other weightie matters of chair Mian religion, in matters of remillion and forginenes of finnes, a offaluation he teacheth to directly against both S. Defer, and as Minst our Saujour Christe, who not onely taught obedience to lings, but also practifed obedience in their connersation a lining: GI **f**02

### The third part of the Sermon

for we reade that they both paied tribute to the king . And also Mat.17. we reade, that the holy birgin Marie, mother to our Sautour Chailt, and Josephwho was taken for his father, at the Emper rours commandement went to the citie of Danid, named Bethe lehem, to be taxed among other, and to beclare their obedience to Luke.2. the magistrates, for Gods ordinances fake. Ind here let be not forget the bleffed birgin Maries obedience: for although the was highly in Gods fauour, and Christs naturall mother, and was also great with childe at the same time, and so nigh her trauaile, that the was delinered in her tourney, pet the gladly, without a my excuse or grudging for conscience sake ) did take that coide and foule winter journey, being in the meane feafon fo poore, that the lap in a ftable, and there the was belinered of Chrift. And across Ding to the fame, loe how S. Deter agreeth, writing by expresse words in his fielt Spiftle: Submit pour felues, and bee fubiett 1.Pet. 1. (faith he) buto kings, as buto the chiefe heades, and buto rulers, as buto them that are fent of him for the punishment of suil Do ers, and for the plaife of them that doe well, for fo is the will of God. I need not to expound these wordes, they be so plaine of themselues Saint Beter Doth not say, Submit pour selues bus to me, as supreme head of the Churchmeither faith he, Submit pour selves from time to time to my successours in Bome:but he faith, Submit pour felues buto pour king, pour supreme head, buto those that hee appointeth in authoritie buder him, for that you shall so shewe your obedience, it is the will of & D. God wil that you bee in subjection to your head a king. This is Gods ordinance, Gods commandement, and Gods holp wil, that the whole body of enery Realme, and all the members a partes of the fame, halbe fubiect to their head, thir king, and that (as Si Deter writeth) for the Lords fake: and (as S. Daul writeth) for 3.Pet.2. conscience sake, and not for feare onely . Thus wee learne by the Rom. 13. word of God, to reeld to our king, that is due to our king: that is, Mat. 22. honour, obedience, paimentes of due fares, customes, teibutes, Rom.13subsidies love, a feare. Thus we know partipour bounden due ties to common authoritie, now let be learne to accomplish the fame. And let be most instantly and heartily may to God, the one ly author of al authoritie, for al them that be in authoritie, accor ding as S. Paul willeth, writing thus to Timothic in his first Epistle: I exhort therefore, that above all things, praiers, supply cations,

fa

a

6

æ

bâ

m

th

to

1110

an

fai

firt

ple

ani

les

ma

hat

aga

mer

ear

pea

ter

Sting

for i

wifi

nen

of obedience.

cations, interreftions, and giving of thanks be done for all mens for kings, and for all that be in authoritie, that wee map line a ouiet a a peaceable life, with al godlines and honeflier for that is good and accepted or allowable in the fight of God our Saujour here Saint Daul maketh an earnest and an especiall erhortation on concerning gining of thanks, and praper for kings and rulers, faring, Aboue al things, as he might far, in any wife principally and chiefely, let praier be made for kings. Let be heartily thanke 6 D To for his great and excellent benefite and prouidence, concerning the frate of bings. Let be pray for them, that they may have Gods favour and Gods protection Aet bs pray, that they may ever in all things have God before their eies. Let be pray, that they may have wifedome, frength, inflice, clemencie, a seale to Gods alory, to Gods beritie, to Christian foules, 4 to the common wealth. Let be pray that they may rightly be their (worde and authoritie, for the maintenance and befence of the Catholike faith conteined in holy Scripture, and of their good and honest hibiects for the feare and punishment of the euil and bicious pege ple. Let be pray that they may most faithfully follow the kings and Captaines in the Bible, David, Czekias, Jolias, and 900 fes, with fuch other : And let be pear for our felies, that wee may live goddy in holy and Christian conversation: so shall wer have Gob on our fide, and then let be not feare what man can do against besto we shall live in true obedience, both to our most mercifull king in Deauen and to our most Christian Queene in earth: so that we please GDD, and have the exceeding benefite, peace of conscience, rest and quietnes here in this worlde, and af ter this life, we that enion a better life, rest, peace, and the enertaling bliffe of heaven, which he graunt by all, that was obedient to be all, even to the death of the croffe, Jefus Christesto whome with the father a the holy Ghost, be al honour and glozy, both now and ener. Amenad our refractor insmediations of this mark

# n & A Sermon against whoredome

and vncleanneffe. 3



dia

JUC

pes

the

e to

not

nas

oas

me,

ta

and

the

C024

elle.

niect

ers.

L DOS

ill of

ne of

s bna

binit

ut he

ad.a

that

D.

nis is

l, that

artes

15 91

th) fot

p the

at is

putes,

n Dues

ich the

ne one accor

s first Supply

tions,

Lithough there want not ( good Christian people) greate fwarmes of bices woolthy to bee rebuked ( buto suche decate is true Godinesse and vertus ous lyuing nowe come : ) pet aboue other bires,

O 2

the

# The first part of the Sermon

the outragious feas of abulterie (or breaking of wedlock) whore Dome fornication and bueleannelle, haue not onely braft in , but also overflowed almost the whole woulde, buto the great diffe nour of Bod, the erceeding infamie of the name of Chaine, the notable becap of true religion, and the biter bestruction of the publike wealth, and that fo abundantly, that through the cu fromable ble thereof, this bice is growen into fuch an beight, that in a maner among many, it is counted no finne at all, but rather a pastime, a balliaunce, and but a touche of pouth : not reouked, but winked at:not punished, but laughed at . Wherefore it is necessarie at this present, to intreate of the sinne of whoredoine and fornication, beclaring buto you the greatnesse of this finne. and howe obious, hatefull, and abominable it is, and hath alway been reputed before God and all good men, and how grienous it hath beene punished both by the lawe of 60 D, and the lawes of diners princes. Againe, to thew pou certaine remedies, where by pe inay (through the grace of God) eschew this most betefrable finne of whoseboine and fornication, and leade pour lines in all honeftie and cleanneffe; and that ye may perceine that fornicati on and whosedome are (in the fight of God ) most abhominable finnes, pe thall call to remembrance this commandement of col. Thou that not commit adulterie: by the which word adulterie. although it be properly buderstande of the bulawfull committe on or toining together of a married man with any woman befile his wife, or of a wife with any man befide her huloand wet there by is fignified also all bulawfull ble of those partes, which be or Deined for generation. And this one commandement (forbidding adulterie ) both sufficiently paint and let out before our eies, the greatneffe of this finne of whosebome, and manifeftly declaret home greatly it ought to bee abhorred of all honest and farthfull perfons. And that none of bs all thall thinke himselfe excepted from this commandement, whether we bee olde or pound, mar ried, or bninarried, man or woman, heare what God the father

beut.23,17 saith by his most excellent Prophete Poles. There shal beem whore among the daughters of Israel, nor no whoremongs among the somes of Israel.

Dere is whosedome, fornication, and all bucleannelle for bidden to all kindes of people, at degrees, and all ages without exception. And that we shall not doubt, but p this precept or com

mandemen

tto

gg n

(I

ti

fil

pi

th

m

ch

in

tr

A) fol

ify

the

of:

me

1101

the

the

tho

the

uill

fall

mai

2 0401

### of whoredome.

mandement pertaineth to be in deede, heare what Christe ( the perfect teacher of all trueth) faith in the newe Testament, Dee have hearde (faith Christe) that it was faid to them of olde time, Mars. Thou half net commit adulterie: but I far buto you, Mohofor ever feeth a Moman, to have his luft of her, hath committed abulterie with her already in his heart. Dere our Saujour Chiffe boeth not onely confirme and stablish the lawe against adulteric, given in the olde Testament of & D the father by his fernant Moles, and make it of full strength, continually to remaine a mong the professours of his name in the newe lawe; but hee also (condemning the groffe interpretation of the Scribes a Pharis feg, which taught that the forefaid commandement onely requis red to abstaine from the outward adulterie, and not from the filthy defires and bupure lustes, ) teacheth be an exacte and full perfection of puritie and cleannelle of life, both to keepe our bos dies budefiled, and our heartes pure and free from all emply thoughtes, carnall defires, and flethely confentes. Dowe can wee then be free from this commaundement, where fo great charge is laied boon by . Day a feruaunt doe what hee will in any thing having a commandement of his maifter to the cons trary. Is not Chile our mailter. Ire not we his fernaunts. How then may we neglect our maifters will and pleafure, and follow our own wil and fantalie-De are im friends (faith Christ) if you keepe those things that I command you.

Now hath Christ our maister commanded us that wee bould forfake at bucleanelle and lecherie both in body and fririte: this therefore must wee doe, if we looke to please God . In the Gospel of Saint Matthew we reade, that the Seribes and Pharifees Marie were orienously offended with Christe, because his disciples did not keepe the traditions of the forefathers, for they walked not their hands when thee went to dinner or supper, and among or ther things, Christ answered and saide, Beare and buderstande: Aot that thing which entreth into the mouth, Defileth the man, Marine but that which commeth out of the mouth Defileth the man . For those things which proceede out of the mouth, come foorth from the beart, and they defile the man. for out of the heart proceed co ull thoughte, murders, breaking of wedlock, whoredome, thefte, falle witnesse, blasphemies: these are the thinges which defile a man. Here may we fee, that not onely unicoer, theft, faile witnes, a

blasobennie.

but thou the n of ecu

1026

that ther iked. it is ome

mme, map outly meg

here Stable in all

ricati nable

faod. terie, mitti

belide there

beau Dding

g,the lareth

othfull cepted

dans. Father

bee m mpnor

ne tov ithout

O2 com emen

# The first part of the Sermon

b

C

C

h

m

fu

m

et

fo.

for

ple

ni

th

iti

lec

fin

hil

adı

fed

Ro

hou

blashbemie defile men, but also evill thoughts, breaking of wedlock, fornication, and whoredome. Who is now offolitle wit, 10hp.14. that he wil esteeme whoredome and fornication to be thinges of small importance, a of no waight before God. Christ which is the

finall importance, a of no waight before God. Christ which is the truth, and can not lie faith that evil thoughtes, breaking of wed lock, whoredown, and fornication befile a man, that is to fay, corrupt both the body and foule of man, and make them, of the temples of the holy ghost, the fifthy dunghil, or dungeon of al bucleane spirits, of the bouse of God, the dwelling place of Satan.

adulterie, was brought but o Christ, said not he but o her, Go thy way, and since no more. Doth not he here call whose dome since?

Ind what is the reward of since, but everlasting death.

nohozedome de sinne, then it is not lawfull for de to commit it.

Llohn. for S. John saith, De that committeth sinne, is of the deuil. And

our Samour faith, Euery one that committeth sinne, is the fermant of sinne. If whose doine had not been sinne, surely S. John Baptist would never have reduked king Herode for taking his knothers wife, but he told him plainely, that it was not lawfull for him to take his brothers wife. Hee winked not at the whore

reproved him for his wicked a about mable living, although for heave he lost his head. Buthe would rather suffer death (then see Bod so dishonozed, by the breaking of his holy precept a comman demet) then to inster whosedom to be unrebuked, even in a king. If whosedom had been but a pastime, a dalliance, a not to be passed of as many count it now a daies) truely John had been more

Doe of Derod although he were a king of great power; but boldly

then twife mad, if he would have had the displeasure of a king, if he would have been cast in priso, and lost his head for a trifle. But John knew right wel how fifthy, stinking, a about mable the sin of whordome is in p sight of God, therfore would not he leave it burebuked, no not in aking. If whoredo be not lawful in a king,

neither is it lawful in a fubieer. If whosedoe bee not lawful in a publik of comon officer, neither is it lawful in a primate perfo. If it be not lawful neither in king, not subject, neither in comon officer, not primate perfo, truly then it is lawful in no man not woman.

of whatsomer degree or age they be. furthermore in the Acts of the Apostles we reade & when the Apostles and elders with the whole congregation, were gathered together to pacific & hearts

Aftes.15.

against adultery.

Parane Alex

ott,

the

eDs

025

ms

me

ıin

thv

ne?

36

tit.

lnd

fers.

obn

his full

Dlv

for.

fee-

anv

ing.

pal.

1026

g, if But

e sin

ing,

. If

offi

má,

g of

the

uts.

of

of the faithfull dwelling at Antioch, (which were disquieted tho rough the falle Doctrine of certaine Jewilh preachers) they fente word to the brethren, that it feemed good to the holy Choft, a to them, to charge them, with no more then with necessary thinges: among other, they willed the to abstaine from ibolatry a fornicas tion from which (faid they) if pe keepe pour feines, pe that do wet. Ante here, how thefe holy a bleffed fathers of Christes Churche, mould charg the congregation with no mo things then were nes ceffary. Dark also how among those things, from the which they commanded the brethren of Intioch to abstaine, fornication and whosedome is numbeed. It is therefore necessary, by the determination and confent of the holy Choft, and the Apollies a Ch ders, with the whole congregation, that as from idolatrie and superstition, so likewise wee must abstaine from fornication and whosedoing. It is necessary buto faluation to abstaine from ides latrie: So is it to abstaine from whosedome. Is there any might er may to leade buto damnation, then to be an idolater Ao. Cue fo, neither is there any nearer way to Dammation, then to bee a fornicator and an whoremonger. Aow where are those people, which to lightly effeeme breaking of weblock, whose dom, for nication and adultery + Itis necessary, faith the holy Choft, the bleffed apostles, belders, to the tobole congregation of Christ, it is necessary to faluation (far ther ) to abstaine from whose doing If it he necessary buto faluation, then woe be to them which near lecting their faluation, give their mindes to fo fifthy and flinking finne, to fo wicked bice, to fuch beteftable aboutination.

## The second part of the Sermon

against adultery.

Ou have beene taught in the first part of this serms against adultery, how that vice at this day raigneth most about all other vices, a what is meant by this word (adultery) a how holy scripture distinately or discounsaileth from doing that fifthy sinne, a finally what rounding commeth to mans some through the sinne of adultery. Prowe to proceed sutther, let by heare what the blefted Apostle Saint Paul suith to this matter, writing to the Romanes, hee hath these wordes: Let by cast away the workes of darkenes, and put on the armour of light. Let by walk housestly as it were in the day time, not in eating and drine

Rom.rs

bing

### The second part of the Sermon

king, neither in chambering and wantonnelle, neither in frife and enuving but put ve on the Lorde Tefus Chrifte, and make not provision for the fleshe to fulfill the luster of it. Dere the hos ly Apostic exhorteth by to cast away the worker of darkenesse, mhich (among other) he calleth aluttonous eating. Dzinking. chás bering, and wantonnesse, which are all ministers buto that bice. and preparations to induce and being in the filthy linne of the flethe. Dee calleth them the deedes and worker of darkenette. not onely because they are customably in darkenesse, or in the night time (for enery one that Doeth eurll, hateth the light, neither commeth he to the light, least his workes should bee reprodued but that they leade the right way buto that buter darkenesse, where weeping and gnathing of teeth thalbe. And hee faithin an other place of the fame Spiffle, They that are in the flelb, can not please of D D: We are detters, not to the fielde, that wee Chould line after the flelbe, for if ve line after the flelb wee that die. Againe be faith, flee from whosedome, for every finne that aman committeth, is without his body: but whosoever committeth mhoredome finneth against his owne body. Doe vee not knowe. that your members are the Temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, whome also pe have of Bod, and pe are not your owner for pe are dearely bought: glozifie God in your bodies. ac. And a litle before he faith. Doe ve not knowe that your bodies are the members of Christ . Shal I then take the members of Christe. and make them the members of an whose-Bod forbid. Doe ver not knowe, that he which deaueth to an whore, is made one bo by with her. There shalbe two in one fleshe (faith he) but he that cicaueth to the Lord, is one spirit. What godly works doeth the bleffed Avolile S. Daul bring forth here to diffwade a discount fel be from whosedome a al bucleaneffe-Dou members (faith be) are the temple of the holy Choste, which whosoener doeth defile. God wil belt: or him as faith 5. 19 aul. If we be the temple of holy aholf how bufitting then is it, to beine that holy wirit from bs through whosedom, in his place to let the wicked fpirites of bucleanelle and fornication, and to be iopned, and doe fernicett them-De are dearely bought (faith hee) therefore alorifie God in vour bodies. Christ that innocent lambe of God, hath bought bs from the feruitude of p deuil, not with corruptible golde a filuer,

but whis most pretious a deare hearte blood. To what intente

C

a

ef

ff

le

th

111

bt

fH

all

COL

mi

kn

82 (

the

tol

lett

blo

ner

is h

mui

hob

arei

Hot

lecu

leffe

lohn.3.

Mat.13,

Bom.8.

2. Cor. 6.

g.Pet.J.

#### against adulterie.

trife

nake

eno

wite.

chā:

pice,

f the

neite.

1 the

ither

med)

neffe.

ithin

b,can

mee

al Die.

aman

itteth

nome.

which

And a

re the

brifte,

oe pee

ne bo

e that

eth the

(coun

ith be)

Defile,

de of b

t from

itesof

nice to

Sod in other by

filuet,

intente

That

That we fould fal againe into our olde uncleannelle a abominas ble lining. Pay berily: but that we bould ferue him al the Daieg Elil.38. of our life, in holinelle and righteoufnelle, that we foul be dozis Luke to he him in our bodies, by puritie a cleameffe of life. De beclareth elfo that our bodies are the mebers of Chailt. Dowe unfeemlie a thing is it then to ceasse to be incorporate or imbodyed a made one with Christ, a through whost dome to be enjoyned and made al one with an whose . What greater dishonour or ininrie can me doe to Chaift, then to take away from him the members of his body, and to toyne them to whoses, dinels, and wicked fois rites . And what more difference can be doe to our felues, then through bucleanes, to toole fo excellent a bignitie and freedome, and to become bondflanes, and miferable captines to the fpirites of darkenelle . Let be therefore confider first the glozie of Christ. then our estate, our dignity, and freedome, wherein God hath let bs, by giving bs his holy spirite, and let us valiantly defende the fame against Satan, and all his craftic affaultes, that Chaift may be honoured, and that we loofe not our liberty or freedome. but still remaine in one write with him.

Moreover, in his Epistle to the Ephesians, the blessed Apos Ephesis sile willeth us to be so pure and free from adultery, fornication, a all uncleanesse, that we not once name them among us (as it bestommeth Saints) nor filthinesse, nor foolish talking, nor iesting, which are not comely, but rather giving of thankes, for this pe knowe (saith he) that no whoremonger, neither uncleane person, or coverous person (which is an idolater) hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ and of God. And that we should remeber Gala. 10, to be holy, pure, and free from al uncleanesse, the holy Apostle cals in Corse leth us Saints, because we are sanctified and made holy by the

blood of Christ, through the holy ghost.

Rowe if we bee faintes, what have wee to doe with the maners of the Peathen. Saint Peter faith, as he which called you i. Petal is holy, even so be pe holy also in pour convertation, because it is written, Be ye holy, for Jam holy. Optherto have we hearde howe greenous a sinne fornication and whosedome is, and how greatly Goddoth abhore it throughout the whole Scripture: and 19. Howe can it any otherwise be then a sinne of most abhormation, seeing it may not once be named among the Christians, muche less it may in any point be committed. And surely if we woulde

weigh

# The second part of the Sermon

Diff

tot

ani

me

Ca DOL

fen

hol

fub

tha

DOI

DOI

ani

con

wt

wi

of 1

mo

fot

ma

red

Do

Be

ber

DOI

lot

int

fto

a

1

weigh the greatnesse of this sinne, and consider it in the right kinde, we thousde finde the sinne of whosedoine, to be that most filthy lake, foule pubble, and flinking finke, whereunto al kinds of finnes and emis flowe, where also they have their relting place

For hath not the adulterer a pride in his whosedome - As the and abiding . wife manfaith, They are glad when they have done euill, and res ioice in thinges that are starke nought. Is not the adulterer also idle, and delighteth in no godly exercise, but only in that his most filthy and beaftly pleasure . Is not his minde pluckt, and bitterly drawen a way from all bertuous fludies, and fruitefull labours, and onely given to earnall and flefbly imagination . Doeth not the whosemonger give his mind to gluttonie, that he may be the more apte to ferue his luftes a carnal pleafures. Doeth not the a Dulterer give his minde to conetounelle, and to polling and pils ling of other, that he map be p more able to mainteine his harlots and whores, and to continue in his filthy and bulawefull love! Swelleth he not also with enuie against other, fearing that his pray hould be allured and taken away from him . Againe, is he not prefull, and replenished with wrath and Displeasure, even as gainst his best beloued, if at any time his beaftly and denilishe re quest be letted - What finne, or kinde offinne is it that is not iol ned with fornication and whosedoine . It is a monfter of mas my heads: it receiveth all kindes of vices, and refuseth all kindes of bertues . If one feuerall finne bringeth dammation, what is to bee thought of that sime, which is accompanied with all entils, and hath waiting on it whatforner is hatefull to God, Damnable to man, and pleafant to Satan?

Great is the dammation that hangeth ouer the heades of for nicatours and adulterers. What thall I fpeake of other incommodifies, which iffue and flowe out of this flinking puddle of whosedome: Is not that treasure, which before al other is most regarded of honest persons the good faine and name of man a wo man, loft through whordome: Mohat patrimomie or linelode, what substance, what goodes, what riches both whosebome thousing confiume and bring to nought + 110hat baliauntnes and Grength is many times made weake, and destroyed with whosedome What wit is fo fine, that is not doted and defaced thosow whose Doine? 110 hat beautie (although it were never fo excellent, is not

#### against adulterie.

difficured through whosedome ? Is not whosedome an enduis to the pleasant floure of youth, and bringeth it not gray heares and othe age before the time? What gift of nature ( although it mere neuer so precious ) is not corrupted with whoredome? Come not the french pocks, with other diners difenses, of whores bome . from whence come fo many baltardes and mifbegot ten children , to the high Difpleafure of & D, and Diffonour of holy wedlocke, but of bohezedoine? Dowe many confume al their fulftance and goods, a at the last fall into fuche extreme powerty, that afterwarde they steale, and so are hanged, through whores bome + Mohat contention and mandaughter commeth of whoze; dome . Dowe many maidens be defloured , howe many wines compted, howe many widowes defiled through whosedome. howe much is the publique and common weale impouerished. and troubled through whosebome? Howe much is Gods worde contemued and depraced through behozebome and whoremone ners e Df this vice commeth a great parte of the Demonles which (now adales) be to commonly accustomed a bled by mens minate authoritie, to the greate Dilpleakire of God, 4 the breache of the most holy knott and bonde of matrimonie. for when this most Detestable sinne is once crept into the break of the abulterer. to that he is intangled with bulawfull and buchaft love, freight waies his true and lawfull wife is despited, her presence is abhorted, her company frinketh, and is loathfome, whatfoener the both is dispraised : there is no quietnesse in the house , fo long as: beis in fight: therefore to make thort tale, the must away, for ber huf oande can brooke her no longer . Thus through whores dome, is the honest and harmelesse wife put away, and an bard lot received in her freed: and in like fort, it happeneth many times in the wife towards her husbande. Dabhomination. Christ our Saujour, bery God and man, comming to restore the lawe of his heavenly father, buto the right leufe, buderstanding, and. meaning (among other thinges) refourmed the abuse of this law of God . for where as the Jewes bled a long fufferance, by cu flome, to put away their wines, at their pleasure, for every cause: Manage Chiff correcting that enill cultome, Did teache; that if any man: put away his wife, and marieth another, for any cause, ercept: onely for adultery, (which then was beath by the lawe) ho was madulterer, forced also his wife to dinorfed, to committed wife

THE

athri

noft

nds

lace

the

D res

alfo

most

terto

urs

not

e the

be as

d pils

clots

oue!

t his

is he

ena

ne res

tiois t

fmas

ndes

mhat

th all

God,

of for

1COIT

die of

non

tour F

mbat

postly

enath

orne:

hozes

is not

DIL

rie:

## The second part of the Sermon

rie, if the were is ned to any other man, and the man alfo fo ion

ned with her, to commit adultery.

In what case then are these abulterers, which for the love of an whose put away their true and lawfull wife, against all lam. right, reason, and conscience . D Dammable is the estate wherin they fland . Swift Destruction shall fall on them, if they repent not a amend not : for God wil not ever fuffer holy wedlock thus to be diffonoured, bated and befpiled. De will once purifibe this flelbly and licentious maner of living, and cause that this bob ordinance (balbe had in reverence and honour. for furely med) locke (as the Apolite faith) is honorable among all men, and the bedde budefiled : But whosemongers and fornicators God will judge, that is to far punish and condemne. But to what purpose is this labour taken, to describe and set foorth the greatnes of the finne of whosedome, and the commodities that iffue and flowe out of it seeing that breath and tongue that fooner faile any man. then he that or may be able to fet it out according to the abouning tion and hemousnelle thereof. Autwithstanding this is spoken to the intent that all men thould flee whose dome, and line in the feare of God: God graunt that it may not be fooken in baine.

0

e

Dres D

t

g III

h

fo

Do

mi

tie

tut

10H am

biff

not

ato the

# The third part of the fermon

A the second part of this Sermon against abulter that was last reade, you have learned howe earnest Ip the feripture warneth by to avoide the fin of adul terie, and to imbrace cleannesse of life : and that through abultery, we fall into all kindes of finnes, and are made bonddanes to the dineil: through cleanesse of life we are made members of Christ: and finally, howe farre adultery bringeth a man from all goodnesse, and drineth him headlong into al bi ces micheefe, and mifery. Aow wil I declare buto you in ov der, with what areeuous punilbments God in times past play mied adultery, and how certains worldely Drinces also bid my milb it, that ye may perceive that behozeborne and fornication be Tinnes no leffe detellable in the light of God, to all good men, then I have hitherto betered. In the first booke of Boles, we read that when manking began to be multiplied byon y earth, the mor and

Heb.3

against adulterie.

MOIO

nie of

lam.

herin

epent

thus

e this

boly

med

id the

mil

rpolt

ofthe

flome

man

mina

poken

in the

ulterr

rneft

fabul

o that

made

mabe

ingeth

al bir

in 024

ft pla

יום סוי

on bet

1, then

reade

né thời

and

e.

and women game their mindes to greatly to fieldly belight, and filthie pleasure, that they lived without all feare of God . God feeing this their beaftly and abominable litting, and perceiping that they amended not, but rather increased dayly moze a moze in their finnefull and bucleane maners, repented that ever hee had made man: a to thew how greatly be abhorreth adultery, whore boine, fornication, and al bucleannes, be made at the fountaines of the deepe earth to burft out, and the fluces of heaven to be oper ned, to that the raine came bolone boon the earth by the foace officiety daies and fourty nightes, and by this meanes befrows ed the whole worlde, and all mankinde, eight persons onely er cented, that is to fay, Abe the preacher of righteouthes, (as S. peter calleth him and his wife, his three fonnes and their wines. D what a greenous plague did God cast here bpo al living creas tures for the finne of whoredoine for the which God, tooke bens graunce, not onely of man, but of all beaftes, foules, and all lie uing creatures . Manslaughter was committed before , pet was Gene not the world destroyed for that ; but for whoredome all for the moulde (few onely ercept ) was overflowed with waters, and fo perified. In example worthy to be remembred, that ve may learne to feate God.

me reade againe, that for the fifthie finne of bucleanes, so general home and Comorre, and the other Citties nigh buto them . were destroyed by fire and brinktone from heaven, so that their was neither man, woman, childe, noz beaft, noz pet any thing that grew boon the earth there left budeftroved. Whose part trebleth not at & hearing of this history Who is so browned in whoredoe and bucleannelle, that buil not nowe for ever after leave this above minable lining, feeing that God fo grievolly punisheth bucleans nes, to raine fire a brimftone from heaven, to beftrop whole Cis ties, to kill man, woman, and childe, and all other living creas tures there abiding , to confinne with fire all that ener grewe - Genery. What can be more manifest tokens of Gods wrath and benge aunce against uncleannesse and immurity of life a spacke this history (good people) and feare the bengeaunce of God. Doe you not reade also, that God did finite Pharao and his bouse with great plagues, bycaufe that he bugodly defired sarathe wife of Abraham - Likewife reade we of Abimelech king of Berar - al though he touched her not by carnail knowledge These plagues

and

#### The third part of the Sermon

and pointhments bid God caft on boon filthe and budeane for

DI OI

10

w

th

th

tio

bo

wi

ma

feo:

aut

ant

the

ftor

dea

ans,

ina

Dear

deu

ofm

02 m

acte

dam

main

andle

gne i

The

mug

repen

then

not . s

thenia

bs, for

Demei

fons, before the lawe was given (the lawe of nature onely rain ming in the heartes of men ) to beclare howe great love he had in matrimonie and wedlocke, and againe, howe much he abhorced abulterie, fornication, and all bucleannes. And when the lame that forbade whosedome was given by Moses to the Temes. Did not God commande that the breakers thereof Coulde be put to death. The worder of the law be thefe : who fo committeth a Dultery with any mans wife, shall die the beath both the man and the woman because he bath broken wedlocke with his neighbors bufe. In the lance alfoit was commanded, that a damofel and ma taken together in tohozedome mouldbe both floned to death. In a nother place we alforeade that God commanded Moles to Num.25. take all the head Bulers, and Princes of the people, and to hand them boon gibbets openly, that every man might fee them, be cause they either committed, or did not punishe whoredome. & graine, bid not God fend fuch a plague among the people for form vication, and bucleannesse, that they bred in one day three and twenty thousande . I passe over for lacke of time, many other biffories of the holy Bible; which declare the greenous benge aunce, and heavy displeasure of God against whose mongers and adulterers . Cettes this extreme punifument appointed of God, theweth embently home greatly God hateth whosedome . And let be not boubt, but that God at this prefet abhorreth al maner of bucleannes, no left then he did in the olde lawe, and will bu doubtedly punish it, both in this world, and in the world to come Pals. for he is a God that ran abide no wickednesse therefore quality t to be eschewed of all that tender the glozie of God, and the sak uation of their obone foules ?

Saint Paul faith, All these thinges are written for our epaumple, and to teach us the seare of God, and the obedience to his holy law for it God spared not the naturall branches, neither will be spare us that be but graftes, if we commit like offence. If God bestroyed many thousandes of people, many cities, year the whole worlde, for whoredome, let us not slatter our selves, a thinke we shall escape free, and without punishment. For he hath promised in his holy lawe, to sende most grienous plagues byour them that transgresse, or breake his holy commandements. Thus have we hearde, howe God punisheth the sinne of adultery: let

against adulteries

Det

raio

adto

neveb

ame

mes.

e vut

tha

n and

boss

anda

eath.

esto

bang

, be

forni

and

other

enge

s and

God,

and

namer

li buy

come.

ottalit

e fal

ur er

to bis

either

fence.

s, pea

elues,

e hath

bpon

Thus

p : let

he nowe heare certaine lawes, which the civill Magistrates. beuised in their countries, for the pun is ment thereof, that we map learne howe bucleannelle hath euer beene Detelted in al wet oidred citties and common wealthes, and among al honest per Lawer defong. The lawe among the Lepreians was this , that when any wifed for were taken in adultery, they were bounde and carried three daies I punishthorow the Citie, and afterwarde as long as they lined, were whorethey defpiled, and with thaine and confusion counted as persons dome. noide of all honestie. Imong the Locrensians the abulterers have both their eyes thrust out. The Romans in times past, punished wholedome, fometime by fire, fometime by foorde, If any man among the Egyptians hadde beene taken in adulterie, thelame; was, that he shoulde openly in the presence of all the people bee fourged naked with whippes, buto the number of a thousande dripes, the woman that was taken with him hadde her note: mite off, whereby the was knowne ener after, to be a whose, and therefore to bee abhorred of all men ... Aunong the Arabians, they that were taken in adulterie, hadde their heades ftriken from their bodges . The Athenians punished whosedome by death in like maner. So likewife, did the barbarous Tarrari-Among the Turkes even at this day, they that bee taken in adulterie, both man and woman are stoned streight wave to beath, without mercie. Thus wee fee what godly actes were denifed in times palt of the high powers, for the putting awaye; of whose dome, and for the mainteining of holve matrinonye, or wedlocke, and pure conversation. Ind the authours of these attes were no Christians, but the Deathen wet were thep so in samed, with the loue of honestie and purenette of life, that for the mainetenance and confernation or keeping by of that, they made godly, statutes, fuffering neither fornication or adulterie to rais me in their Realines bupunished . Chaift faide to the people, The Ainemites halrife at the indocument with this nation (mean ming the bulaithfull Jewes) and hall condenme them : for they; repented at the preaching of Jonas, but behold faith he a greater then Jonas is here, (meaning himselfe) and pet they repente not . Shal not (thinke you) likkmife the Locreofians, Arabians, Athenians, with fuch other, rife by at the indgement, and condemme: bs, for as much as they ceased from whosedome at the commans fement of man, and wee have the lawe, and manifest preceptes:

r.Cor.s.

Matt.11. Luke.3.

Gal.5. Ephel.s.

# The third part of the Sermon

and commandements of God, and pet forfake we not our filthy connerfation - truely, truly it shalbe easier at the daye of indees ment, to these heathen, then to be ercept we repent and amend. for though death of body feemeth to be a greenous punishment in this worlde for whosedome : pet is that paine nothing in com parison of the greenous tounets which adulterers, fornicators, and all bucleane perfons thall fuffer after this life . for all fuche shalbe excluded and thut out of the kingdome of heaven, as & Paul faith, Be not deceived, for neither whoremongers, nor worlhippers of Images , nor adulterers , nor weakelinges , nor Sodomites, nor theeues, nor couetous perfons, nor drunkerds, nor curfed fpeakers, nor pillers, thall inherite the kingdome of Apoc. 20. Bod . Ind Saint John in his Revelation faith, That whore mogers that have their part with nurberers, forcerers, enchauns ters, lyers, idolaters, and fuch other, in the Lake which burneth with fire and brinftone, which is the fecond death. The punity ment of the body, although it be death, bath an ende:but the pu nishment of the soule, which Saint John calleth the second death, is everlatting, there thatbe fire and brintone, there thatbe wee ping and gnallying of teeth, the toozme that there thall gnawe the conscience of the damned, shall never die . D whose hearts diffilleth not even droppes of bloode, to heare and confider their thinges . If we tremble and thake at the bearing and naming of these paines, oh what shall they doe that shall feele them, that shall suffer them, rea, and ever shall suffer, worlds without end: God have mercy boon by. Moho is now to drowned in finne, and past all godlines, that he will set more by fifthy and stinking pleas fure (which soone passeth away ) then by the loss of everlasting glozy . Againe, who will fo give bunfelfe to the luftes of the fleth, that he feareth nothing at all the paine of hell fire - But let be heare home we may eschewe the sinneof whosedome and adulte rie, that we may walke in the feare of God, and be free from thole most acceuous and intollerable torments, which abide al buclean

perfons. To audide fornication, adulterie, and all bucleannes,

of bigodlines. This thall we easily doe, if when wee feele in

wherby to let be prouide that aboue all thinges, we may keepe our heartes avoid for- pure and cleane, from all euill thoughtes and carnall luftes : for and adul- if that be once infected and corrupt, we fall headlong into all kind acrie.

> wardely, that Satan our olde enumie termteth be buto whote Donne,

t

a

C

E

tú

DÉ

COL

mh

let i for

nall

Gin

against adultery.

filthy

indaes

mnend.

Chment

n come

cators,

ill fuche

855

g, not

B , 1102

kerds.

orne of

phote

baum

rrneth

nunilly

beath,

mee

name

earte

thele

mina

that

end:

e.and

pleas Ofing

flem.

et bs ulte

boft

lean

nes.

rtes for

und

ins 1123

me,

dome, wee by no meanes confent to his craftie fuggettions, but baliantly realst and withstand him by strong faith in the worde of God, alleadaing against him alwayes in our heart, this come mandement of 600; Scriptum eft, non machaberis. It is written, Thou halt not commit whosedome. It hall be good allo for bs, ener to time in the feare of God, and to let before our epes, the greenous threatninges of @ D againft all ungodly finners, and to confider in our minde, howe filthie, beaffly, and short that pleasure is, wherebuto Satan continually stirreth and moucth bs: Ind againe, howe the paine appointed for that finne, is intollerable and euerlafting. Dozeouer, to ble a temperance and lobrictie in eating and brunking, to eschewe bucleane communication, to anoide all filthie companye, to fice idlenede, to belight in reading of holy Scriptures, to watche in godlie praiers and bertuous meditation, and at all times, to exercise some godlie trauailes, thall helpe greatly buto the eschewing of whow

he pu And here are al begrees to be monthed, whether they be matied or brimatted, to love chalittie and cleannelle of life. For the maried are bounde by the lawe of God so purely to love one an other, that neither of them fecke any frang love . The man must onely cleane to his wife, and the wife againe onely to her butbande: they must so delite one in anothers companie, that none of them couet any other. And as they are bounde thus to live together in all goddinesse and honestie, so like wife is their duetie, bertuoully to bring by their children, and to provid that they fal not into satans mace, not into any bucleannelle, but that they come pure and honest buto holy wedlocke, when time requireth. So like wife ought all mainters, and rulers to provide that no whosedome, not any point of bucleannelle be bled among their lemantes. And againe, they that are fingle, and feele in themseines that they cannot live without the companie of a woman, let them get wines of their obone, and to live godly together: for it is better to marrie then to burne.

and to anothe fornication, faith the Apoltle, let enery man 1. Cor.7. haue his obone wife, and euerie woman her obone hulbande. fie nally, all fuch as feele in them felues a fufficiencie and habilitie duongh proorking of Gods (pirite) to lead a fole and continent the thein praise God for his gift, a feeke al meanes possible to

## The first part of the Sermon

maintaine the fame: as by reading of boly feriptures, by godly meditations, by continuall prayers, and fuch other bertuous er erciles. If we all on this wife will endenous our lelues to elchem fornication, abulterie, and all bucleannelle, and leade our lives in all godimeffe and honeftie, feruing God with a pure acleane heart, and glouifying him in our bodies by the leading an innocent and harmelelle life, we may be fure to be in the number of thole, of whome our Sautour Chaiff Theaketh in the Golpel on this manner, Bleffed are the pure in heart, for they hall fee gode to whome alone be all glorie, honour, tule, and power, worldes mithout ende. Imen.

of

G

tel

all

bo

m

boi

oft

me bet

iga 19a

ant

cozi

bitt

rie I

and pia

pou

allo

POU

trut

otai

Ind

his e it be

miff

ting

foten

foirt ofth

with

das

raine

one f

Mar.s.

#### induction in cating and Demisung, to etche use landicage coase 12 A Sermon against contention and brawling. 3- 141 dom anout and our an

Dis Day (good Christian people) shall be declared in to you, the buprofitableneffe and fbamefuil bubone ( fie of contention, ftrife, and Debate, to the intente. that when you hall fee as it were in a table painted before your eyes, the euilifauourednesse and deformitie of this most detestable bice, your tomackes mape bee moued to rife a gainft it, and to beteft and abhorre that finne, which is fo much to bee bated, and pernitious and hurtfull to all menu 38 utas mong all kindes of contention, none is more burtfull thenis 1. Tim.t. Contention in matters of religion. Chebetoe (faith Saint Daul ) fooliff and bulearned queftions , knowing that the baced ftrife. It becommeth not the feruant of God to fight, m Orine, but to be meeke tobarde all men. This contention and frife was in Saint Paules time among the Counthians and is at this time among by English men. Fortoo many thereby which boon the Me benches or other places, delight to let forth certaine questions, not so much pertapning to edification, as to payne glozie, and the wing foozth of their cumning, and fo bulos berlie to reason and dispute, that when neither part will give place to other, they fall to chiding and contention, and fome time from whot words, to further inconvenience. Saint paul could not abide to heare among the Counthians, thele words of discorde or diffention, I holde of Paul, I of Cephas, and In Apoly

1. Tim, 1.

Cor.3.

MIRES BEE

## against contention.

CC

ues

ane

mos

lon

:000

Deg

allat isdel

ortan

1130

i don

dimi

one ente

inted fthis

ifere

much

utno

entis

aint

£ , 01

n and s.and

crebe

forth

as to

latine

Come

19 aut

ordes

随便 (log)E

Appollo: no hat woulde hee then fay, if hee heard thefe words of contention ( which bee nowe almost in everie mans month?) peeisa Pharifee, bee is a Gofpeller, he is of the newe fort, hee is of the olde faith, bee is a new broched brother, bee is a go ob Catholique father, bee is a Davilt, be is an heritique. Db hom the Church is dinided! Dh howe the cities beecut and mange ted! Oh howe the coate of Chilt, that was without feame, is alto rent and torne: Ob bodie inpflicall of Christ, where is that holy and happie britie, out of the which who focuer is, he is not in Chaift? If one member be pulled from an other, where is the bodie? If the bodie be drawen from the heade, where is the life of the bodie: wee can not be joyned to Chaift our beade, excepte me bee glued botth concorde and charitie one to an other. for he that is not of this buitie is not of the Church of Chaiff, which isa congregation of buitie together, and not a diufion. Saint . Cort Paul faith. That as long as emulation or enuying, contention, and factions or fectes be among by, we be carnal, and walke according to the fieldly man. and Saint James faith, If pe hane Limit. bitter emulation or enuring, and contention in your hearts, alor tie not of it: for where as contention is, there is buffedfallnes, Louis and all entill deedes. and who do we not heare S. Daul, which mareth be where as he might commande be faving. Thefeech rou in the name of our Lorde Tefus Christ, that you will weake all one thing, and that there be no diffention among you, but & you will be one whole body of one mind, and of one opinion in y truth. If his defire be reasonable and honest, who doe wee not grant it? If his request be for our profite, why doe wee refuse it? Indif we lift not to heare his petition of praper, vet let be heare his erhottation, where he faith, Jerhott you that you walke as Ephelait becommeth the vocation in which you be called, with all lubmillion and meekenes, with lenitie and foftnesse of minde, beas ting one another by charitie, fludying to keepe the buitte of the pittle, by the bonde of peace : for there is one bodie, one pirit, one faith one baptisme. There is (faith he) but one bodie, of the which he can bee no linely member, that is at variance with the other members. There is one spirite, which corneth and buitteth all thunds in one. In And honce can this one wirit taine in by, when we among our felues be divided. There is but one faith, and how can the Men lay, De is of the old faith, a he is ٥f

# The first part of the Sermon

C

ſŧ

DI

Ot

m

h

PU

nu

the

the

and

leffi

bur

uill

tim

fo fu

men

dzini

mon

or th

which

to ke

02 021

Chan

neith

theeu

binad

andca

rung

of the newe faith? There is but one baptione, and then fhall

not all they which be baptiled be one? Contention cauleth Divis fion, wherefore it ought not to be among Christians, whom one faith and baptisme ioneth in an buitie. But if wee contemme Saint Paules request and exhortation, vet at the least, let be regarde his earnest entreating, in the which he doeth berie ear nestly charge bg, and (as I map to speake ) consure bg in this Philia. foune and maner, If there be any consolation in Christ, if there be any comfort of love, if you have any felowibin of the frite. if you have any bowelles of pitie and compassion, fulfill my tope, being all like affected, having one charitie, being of one minde of one opinion, that nothing be done by contention, or vaine alo rie, noho is he, that bath any bowelles of pitie, that will not be moued with these worder so vithie; whose heart is so stonie, that the (worde of these wordes ( which bee more tharpe then anye two edged (worde) may not cut and breake a funder wherefore let be endeuour our felues to fulfill Saint Baules iove here in this place, which shall be at length to our great tope in an other place. Let be so read the Scripture, that by reading therof, we Boulde may be made the better liners, rather the the more contentious read the Disputers . If any thing be necessarie to be taught, reasoned, or Gripture. disputed, let by doe it with all meekenesse, softnesse, and lenitie. If any thing shall chaunce to be spoken bucomely, let one beare anothers frayltie. Deethat is faultie, let him rather amende, then defende that which he bath (poken amiffe, leaft be fall by contention from a foolish errour, intoan obstinate berefie: for it is better to give place meekelie, then to winne the bictozie with the breach of charitie, which chaunceth when every man will Mit. 10. Defende his ovinion obstinately. If we be Christian men, why Doe me not followe Chailt, which faith, Learne of mee, for I am meete and lowly in heart? A disciple must learne the lesson of his Scholemailter, a aferuant must obey the commandement of his mafter. He that is wife a learned, faith & James ) let him thew his goodnes by his good convertation, and fobernes of his miledome for where there is enuie and contention, biledom

cometh not from God, but is worldly wifedom, mas wifedows

deuilith wisedome. for the wisedome that cometh from about

from the Spirite of God, is chaft and pure, cozeupted with

no euill affections: it is quiet, meete, and peaceable, abhop

#### against contention.

lis

ne

ne

08

is is

935

te, pe,

Dea

rlos

be-

hat

npe oze

e m.

ous.

otie.

nde

Il bo

DZ IL

with

mbr

D2 3

on of

ntof

t him.

of bus

Dome.

mue de

bout

mith

bhop

ring

ring all belire of contention; it is tractable obedient, not grub q= ing to learne, and to gue place to them that teach better for their refounation. for there fhall never be an ende of friuing and contention, if the contende tobo in contention fall be mafer, and have the overhande: if we thall heave errour boon errour.if we continue to befende that oblimately, which was tooken bnaduifedly. for tructh it is, that ftifneffe in mainteining an opinion, breedeth contention, brawling, and chibing, which is a bice among all other most pernicious and pestilent to common peace and quietneffe. And as it frandeth betwirt two perfong and parties ( for no man commonly doeth chide with himfelfe) fo it comprehendeth two most Detestable bices: the one is picking of quarelles, with tharpe and contentious wordes: the other frandeth in fowarde auniwearing, and multiplying enil morbeg , againe. The first is to abominable, that S. Daul 1. Cor. g. faith, If any that is called a brother, be a worlhipper of idoles, a mamier, a picker of quarrels, a theefe, or an extortioner, w bim is fuch a man, fee that ye cat not. Row here confider & Daul numbreth a foulder, a bratoler, or a picker of quarelles, among Against theenes and idolaters, and many times commeth leffe burt of a quareltheef, then of a railing tongue: for the one taketh away a mang Picking. good name, the other taketh but his riches, which is of much leffe balue and estimation , then is his good name. and a theefe burteth but hun from whome he frealeth; but he that bath an es will tongue, troubleth all the towne, where he dwelleth, a fometime the whole countrie. And a rayling tongne is a pestilence fofull of contacionfieffe, that Saint Daul willeth Christian men to forbeare the companie of fuch, and neither to eate not 1-Cor.6. bunke with them . And whereas hee will not that a Christian woman foulde forfake ber bufband, although be be an infidel. of that a Christian servaint shoulde departe from his maister. which is an infidell and beathen, and fo fuffer a Christian man to keepe companie with an infidell: pet he forbiddeth by to cate or drinke with a feoulder, or quarell picker. And also in the firt Chapter to the Counthians, he faith thus, Be not deceived, for 1. Cor. 6. neither fornicatours, neither worthingers of idolles, neither theenes, nor brunkardes, nor curied weakers hall dwell in the singdom of beauen. It must needs be a great fault, of doth moue and cause the father to differite his natural sounc. And howe

D 3

# The first part of the Sermon

can it otherwise be, but that this cursed speaking must needed be a most damnable linne, the which boeth cause God our most mercifull a louing father , to Deprine be of his mon bleffed king Dome of heaven! Against the other sinnethat stanbeth in requis frowarde ting taunt for taunt, speaketh Christ himself, saying: Jap bnto Marth fe pou, refift not enill, but loue pour enemies, and fay wellby them, that fay enill by you, Doewell buto them that Doe enilt Manh.s. buto pous and prap for them that doe butte and perfecute you, that you may bee the children of your father which is in heaven, who fuffereth his funne to rife both bypon good and enill, and fendeth his raine both byon the inft and buiuft. To this Doctrin of Chaift agreeth berie well the teaching of S. Paut, that cho-Cen beffell of Bod, who ceafeth not to erhort and call byon bg, faying, Bleffe them that curfe pou, bleffe I fap, and curfe not, res compence to no man entil for entil, if it be poffible (as much as lis eth in you) live peaceably with all men.

The second part of the Sermon against contention.

Thath beene beclared bnto pou in this Sermona gainst strife and brawling, what great inconvents ence commeth thereby, specially of such contention as groweth in matters of religion; and how when as no man will give place to another, there is none ende of cons tention and discorde: and that bnitie which God requireth of Chillians, is beterly thereby neglected and broken : and that this contention fandeth cheefely in two pointes, as in picking of quarrelles, and making of frowarde aunsweres. Aowe pe thall heare Saint Paules wordes , faying, Dearely beloued, a uenge not pour lelues, but rather gine place bnto wath, forit is written, bengeaunce is mine, a I wil reuenge, faith the Loid. Therefore if thine enemie hunger, feede him, if he thirft, gine him Dunke: bee not ouercome with euill , but ouercome euil with goodnesse. All these be the wordes of Saint Paul, but they that bee full of Romacke, and let fo much by themsclues, that they may not abide to much as one euill worde to be spoken of them

Deut.31.

#### against contention.

28

oft

not!

uts

nto

lbv:

mil

ou,

ien.

and

trin

cho:

bg.

t.res

s li

on as

uents

ntion

when

f cons

eth of

chat

cking

me pe

160.as

, forit

Low.

ne hint

with

it they

, that

ken of

them

them, peraduenture will fap: If I be reniled, thail I ftande An obio fill like a Goofe, oz a foole, with my finger in my mouth? Shal dios. The fuch an ideote and difarde, to fuffer everie man to freake bpon mee what they lift, to raile what they lift, to we we out all their benime against mee at their pleasures! Is it not connenis ent that be that freaketh enill, foulde be aunswered according be' If I hall ble this lenitie and foftnelle, I thall both increase mine enunies frowardnes, and proude other to doe like. Such reasons make they that can suffer nothing, for b defence of their Impacience. and pet if by frowarde aunfwering to a frowarde Angua person, there were hope to remedie his trowardnesse, he shoulde sweate, leffe offende that so shoulde aunswere, doing the same not of ire or malice, but onely of that intent, that hee that is fo fromarde or malitious, may be teformed. But he that can not amend an other mans faulte-or can not amend it without his owne fault. better it were that one should perish, then two. Then if he can not quiet him with gentle wordes, at the least let him not folow him in wicked a bucharitable words. If he can pacifie him with Auffering, let bim luffer, and if not, it is better to luffer enil, the todoe enillato fay well, then to fay enill. for to speake well as gainst enil, commeth of the spirite of God: but to render enill for euill, commeth of the contrarie fritte. And he that can not temper nor cule his owne anger, is but weake and feeble, and ras ther morelike a moman or a childe, then a ftrong man. for the true frength and manlineffe is to ouccome wrath, and to dife pile injuries, and other mens foolishnes. And besides this, bee that thall dispile the wrong done buto bim by his enimie, everie man hall perceive that it was spoken or done without cause: where as confrarie, be that both fume and chafe at it, fall belie the cause of his adversarie, giving suspition that the thing is true. Ind in fo going about to reuenge euill, wee fewe our felues to bee euilland while we will punth and revenge an other mans follie, we double and augment our owne follie. But many pretences find they that be wilfull, to colour their impacience. Dine entinie, fav they, is not weathie to have gentle wordes or deedes, being fofull of malice or frowardnesse. The lette hee is worthie, the more arte thou therefore allowed of God, and the moze arte thou commended of Chaift, for whose lake thou houldest render good for euill, because hee bath come, B) 4

1.Pct.1.

Elai4.

mercie on mee.

# The second part of the Sermon commaunded thee, and also beferred that thou houldest so doe.

ti

B

H

fi

to

bt

ig

m bo

Tâ

E bt

bi

bp

ſα

na

Ini

m

ne tto

mo

900

me

of t

thi

like

gre

fein

Cab

men

The neighbour hath peraduenture with a worde offended theer cal thou to the remembrance with how many words and oceds,

how greenoully thou halt offended thy Lorde God. nohat was man, when Christ dred for him! was he not his enemie, and bu worthie to have his fauour and mercie ? Enen fo, with what gentleneffe and patience doeth he forbeate and tollerate and lut fer thee, although he is daply offended by thee? forgue there fore a light trespalle to thy neighbour, that Christ may forgue thee many thousandes of trespasses, which art every day an of fender. for if thou forgine thy brother, being to thee a trefpas fer, then half thou a fare ligne and token, that God will forgine thee, to whom al men be bebters and trespaffers. How wouldest thou have God mercifull to thee, if thou wilt be cruell buto the brother? Canft thou not finde in thine heart to bo that towards another that is thy fellow, which God hath done to thee, that art but his feruant? Dught not one finner to forgine another, feeing that Christ which was a finner, bid pray to his father for them that without mercie and dispitefully put him to beatly Who, when he was remiled, bid not ble remiling woods again, and when he fuffered wrongfully, he did not threaten, but game all bengeance to the inogement of his father which inogeth rightfully. And what crakeft thou of thy heade, if thou labour not to be in the body? Thou can't be no member of Chair, if thon follow not the steppes of Christe: (who as the Prophete faith) was ledde to death like a Lambe, not opening his mouth to reutiling, but opening his mouth to praying for them that cur rifged hun, faping, father, forgive them, for they can not tell what they doe. The which example , anone after Chrift, Saint Luke. 13. Steuen Did folow, a after S. Daul: we be cuill fpoten of faith he) and wee fpeake well: we fuffer perfecution, and take it path Actes.7. ently: Men curle vs, and we gentlie entreate. Thus S. paul taught that he did, and he did that he taught. Bleffe you ( laith 1.Cor.4. he) them that perfecute you: vieffe you, and curfe not . Is its great thing to speake well to thine aduersarie, to whom Chille Doeth commaund thee to doe well? Dauid when Semei did call him all to naught, did not chide againe, but faide patiently. Suffer him to fpeake enill , if perchaunce the Lorde will hant

Distories bee full of examples of Beathan

some against contention ?

DOC.

DS.

age bno

hat

ne

CECO JUR

OF

pas gine

Deft

the

ros

that

thet.

er for attr

Bint.

geth bout

a, t

ohete

muth

t coul

of tell

aint

Taith

patis

Daul

Caitt

Sitt

hille

id call

ently.

haus

athen men

men, that tooke berie weekelp both opprobatous and reprochful mordes, and miurious or logongful deedes. And thall their beathen excell in patience by that profeste Chuste, the teacher and erample of all paciences Lifander, when one Did rage agains him, in reutling of him, he was nothing modued but faire. Goe to noto, fpeake against me as much and as ofte as thou wilt. and leave out nothing, if perchaunce by this meanes thousan bischarge thee of those naughtie thinges, with the which it seemeth that thou art full laben. Hany men speake emil of at men. because they can speake well of noman . After this fort, this wife man auordeth from him, the reprochfull toords spoken bnto bim, imputing and laying them to the naturall fickeneffe of his advertarie. Pericles when a certaine fronder, or rapling fefome and rettile bein; be aunimearch not a brothe againe a but ment into a gallerie, and after to wardes nightig when be went home, this feotiber folowed him, raging billmore and more, berause besatoe the other to set nothing by him: and after that he came to his gate (being backenight) Pericles conventided one of bis fernantes to light a forth, and to bring the conider his owne house. Dee bid not onely with quies note Author this brauler patiently, but also recommenced an emili surve with a good turne, and that to his enumier as it not a frame for be that professe Christ, to be toose then beathen people, in a thing theretelp pertenning to Christes veligion finell philosophie per fwadethem, motethen Gods mote hall verfmade be ! hall naturall reason prenaile more with them then religion shall with by ! thall many boiledome leade them to thole thinges, wherebuto the heavenly doctrine can not lead bat no hat blind neffe wilfulneffe, or rather madnes is this A Paricles being promoked to anger with manie billanous wordes, auni wered not a word. 28ut we, flirred but with one little word, what foule work doe we make: How do we finne, rage, flampe, and flare like mad men? Many men, of enery trifle mil make a great matter, and of the sparke of a little mor de will kindle a great free, taking all thinges in the worst part. But bolive much better is it a more Reals to like to the example and doctrine of Christ, to make rather of a fro quarel great fault in our neighbour, a fmall fault, reasoning with our piking. kines after this forte. De frake thefe wordes, but it was in a fodaine heate, outhedrinke wake them, and not bee, or hee Cuake

20.2.18

The second part of the sermon

fo

th

RI

bú

of

of

bit

fo

to

fri

Chó

in I

Cap

oth

ther

ling

kno

Ari

neri

bear mbe

neff

and bim

fwer afur

habe them at the motion of come other, or he thake them being ignorant of the twith, he wake them not against me, but against bin whom he chought me to be. But as touching cuit speaking, he that is revieto weake entil against other men, first let himer amme himfelfe, whether he befaultleffe and cleare of the faulte which he findeth in an other. For it is a chame when her that blameth another for any faute, is quiltie himfelfe, either in the fame fault, eitherin a greater. It is a fhame for bim that is blind to call another man blimbe, and it is more fhame for him that is whole blyade, to call him blinkarde, that is but purblinde. for this is to fee a ftraw in another mans eye, when a man bath

a blocke in his owneeve. 07 11 Then let him confider , that he that bleth to fpeake enil, fall

he will for his pleature, thatbe compelled to heare that he would not, to his bipleature. Moreoner,let him remember that fape ing, that we hall give an accompt for everie tole worde. Howe much mote then half we make a rectioning for our fharpe, bitter

brauling and chibing wordes, which pronoke our brother to bee angele, and to to the breach of his charities and as touchinge uil an levering, although we be never to much prouoked by other

commonly be cull woken of againe. And hethat weaketh what

mens ettill speaking, pet we shall not follow their frowardnesse by euflant weating, if we confidenthat anger is a kind of made

Reafos to Melle, and that he which is angete, is (asit were for the time)in moue me a phientie. wherefore let him bemare, leafte in his fucte be speake any thing, whereof afterwarde he may have milt canteto

answering be forie. Ind he that will befend that anger is not fine, but that he hath reason, even when he is most angrie: then let him tes fon thus with him felfe tohen be is angrie. Rowe Jam fo mo ued and chafed, that within a little while after I hall be other wife minded : wherefore then fhouide I now fpeake any thing

in mine anger, which bereafter, when I woulde faineft, cannot be changed! noherefore that I bo any thing, now being ( agit

were) out of my wit, for the which, when I shall come to my selfe againe, Thali be berie fab! nohy doeth not reason, why

both not godlinelle, yea why both not Chailt obteine that thing nowe of mee, which hereafter time thall obtepue of mee? If a

man bee called an abulterer, blurer, bunkarde, oz by anpos ther mamefull name, let him confider earneftly, whether he be

from fro-

# The thinoingst contention it of T

nd.

ecs

ilte

bat

the

línd hat

nde.

ath

hall ohat

diuc

fap: ome ittes

abee

TO CS

thet nelle

made ne im

ebce

neto

that

nten:

0.1110

thet

thing

annot

asit

to mp

toby

thing

Ifa

anp 0:

be be

fo called feuely or fallely if teuely, let hun amende his faulte. that his advertarie may not after worthile charge him with Auch offences: if thefe thinges be laide againft himfalfely, vet let him confider whether he bath ginen any occasion to be suspected of fuch thinges, and to be may both cut of that full ition, where ofthis flaunder Didarple, and in other thinges thall time more marily. And thus bring our felues, wee may take no burt, but rather much good, by the rebukes and flaunders of our enimie. for the reproch of an enunte may be to many men a quicker four to the amendement of their life, then the gentle monition of a friende. Philippus the king of Abacebonie, when bee was entil hoken of by the cheefe Bulers of the citie of Athens, hee bid thanke them hartily, because by them be was made better, both in his wordes and deedes : for I ftubie (farth hee) both by my favings and Doings, to proue them lyers.

#### The third part of the Sermon against contention.

Chearde in the laft leffon of the Sermon againffe frife and brauling, howe wee may aunimere them which mayntagne their froward fapinges in contention, and that will revenge with words fuch enil as other men boe them, and finally howe wee may according to Gods will order our felues, and what to confider towardes them when we are proudked to contention and strife with raps ling wordes. Rowe to proceede in the fame matter, you halt know the right way how to difproue and ouercome your aduers. Arie and enimie. This is the best way to improve a mans ad urfarie, to to line, that all which that know his honeftie, mave beare witnes that he is flaundered ontoothile. If the faulte, whereof he is flaundered, be fuch, that for the defence of his honeftie, he muft needes make answere, let him auswere quietlie and foftly, on this fashion, That those faultes be layde against himfalsely. For it is trueth that the wife man fauth, A soft and wer all wageth anger, a a hard a tharp and wer both flie by rage Proutis. thery. The foarp antweate of Mabal, promoked Danid to cenel

benge-

# The third part of the Sermon

m

8

be

bt

of

OU

Cet

aşı toh

ble

mb

bin

felfi

be fr

tie o

mon

of pa

and

do as

Burt

this

tic? y

of G

andi

appea

ttil.le

mal

beene

1.Reg. 25. bengeance: but the gentle wordes of Abigail quenched the fire agame that was all in a flame . Ind a speciall remedie against malicious tongues, is to arme our felnes with patience, meeke neffe, and filence, leaft with multiplying wordes with the ent mie, we be made as euill as he, But they that can not beare one entit worde, peraduenture for their owne excuse will aleane An obicesion. that which is written: De that belyifeth his good name, is cruel. Alfo we read, Antwere a foole according to his foolishnes. And our Loide Jelus did holde his peace at certaine euill fayinges: Prou.16. but to some he aunt weared biligently. Be hearde men call bim a Samaritane, a Carpenters tonne, a wine beinker, and bee helde his peace: but when he hearde them fay, Thou haft the di John,19. uell within thee, he auntwered to that earnestly. Trueth it is in Answere. deede, that there is a time, when it is convenient to aunfwere a foole according to his foolishnes, least bee shoulde feeme in his owne conceit to be wife. And fometime it is not profitable to an Iwere a foole according to his foolishnesse, least the wife man be made like to the foole. when our infamie, or the reproch that is done buto bg, is iopned with the perill of many, then it is ne ceffarie in auns wearing, to be quicke and readie. for we reade that many holy men of good zeales, have Charpelie and fiercely both fpoken and aunf wered tyrantes and enil men: which fharp mordes came not of anger, rancoz, or malice, or delire of ben geance, but of a feruent defice to being them to the true know ledge of God, and from bugodly lining, by an earnest and tharp rebuke and chibing. In this zeale, Saint John Baptift called the Pharifces, Ibbers broode : and Saint Baul called the Sa Mat.3. Gal.3. lathians, fooles: a the men of Crete, he called lers, euil beaftes, and fluggifh belies:and the faile Apostles, bee called dogges. Titus. 1. and craftie workemen. And his zeale is godly, and to be allow Philip.3. ed, as it is plainely proned by ferample of Christ, who although be were the fountaine and foring of al meekenes, gentlenes, and Mat.23. loftneffe ! pet be called the obffinate Scribes and pharifees, Math. 16. blinde guides, fooles, painted graues, hypocrites, Serpentes, Adders broode, a corrupt and wicked generation. Allo he rebu keth Deter eagerlie, faping, Goe behinde me Satan. Libewill Actes.13. S. Baul reproducth Climas, faping. D thou fullof al craft and guile, enimie to aliuffice, thou ceafed not to deftrop & right was of God: and now loe, the hande of the Lorde is uppour thee, and

#### against contention.

ite

inst

he:

mi

are

age.

ind

res:

bim

bee

ad s

sin

rea

bis

an

n be

at is ne

eade

rcely

barr

ben:

10m

harp

alled

€ 58

aftes,

gges.

ough

s,and

ifces,

entes,

rebu

ewile

ft and

t mais

e, and

thou

thou halt not be blinde, and not fee for a time. And Saint to ter reprehendeth Ananias berie harpelp, faving, Ananias, bom is it that Satan bath filled the heart that thou houldeft lie bus to the holy Choft? This zeale hath ben to feruent in many good men, that it hath ftirred them, not onely to fpeake bitter and eas ger wordes, but also to Doe thinges, which might freme to some wbe cruell, but in deede they be berie iuft, charitable, and godle. because they were not done of pre, malice, or contentions mind. but of a feruent minde, to the glozie of God, and the correction offinne executed by men called to that office . for in this zeale our Lord Tefus Christ did drive with a whippe the burers and fellers out of the Temple . In this scale Botes brake the two tables which hee had received at Gods hand, when hee lame the Ifraelites daunting about the Calfe a caused to bee killed ruiti. D. of his owne people. In this zealed hinees the conne of Eles azer, bid thuft through with his frootde, Zamrie and Colbie, But thele whome be founde together ionned in the act of lecherie. mehere examples . fore nowe to returne agains to contentions words, and special are not to pin matters of religion, and Gods worde (which woulde bee ed of euebled with all modeftie sobernesse, and chastitie) the wordes of rie bodie, Saint James ought to be well marked, and borne in memorie, be called where be laith, that of contention rifeth all euist. And the wife to office king Solomon faith Donour is Due to a man that Reepeth hitte and let in felle from contention, and all that mingle themfelues therwith authorities befooles. And because this bice is so much fruttuff to the fortetienf a common wealth in all well ordered cities, there common braulers and scoulders be punished with a notable kinde of payne; as to be fet on the cucking frode, pillogie, or fuch like. and they be be worthie to live in a common wealth, the which do as much as letth in them, with banding and foulding to Dis furbe the quietnes and peace of the fame. And whereof cometh this contention, attie, and variance, but of prior and baine alotic? Let by therefore humble ourselnes under the mightie hand 1.Pet. Sie of God, which hath promised to rest boon them that bee humble Luk.3... and low in spirite. If we be good and quiet Thuisian men, let it appeare in our speach and tongues . If we have fortaken ? Des millet by vie no more divelich tongues: De that hath bene a rais ing fcoulder, nowe let him bee a fober counsayler. He that hath bene a malitious flaunderer, now let bim bee a louing comfor-

#### The third part of the Sermon

ter. De that hath beene a baine railer, now let him be a ghofflie teacher. Dethat bath abused his tongue in curling, now let him ble it in bleffing. Dethat hath abuled his tongue in euill foeas king, nowe let bim ble it in speaking wel. All bitterneffe, anger, railuig, and blasphemie, let it be auoided from you. If you mar, and it be possible, in no wife bee anary. But if you may not bee cleans poide of this passion, then pet so temper and buidle it, that it fir pou not to contention and brauling. If pou be prouoked to euill (peaking, arme pour felle with patience, lenitie, and filence, either (peaking nothing, or elle being berie foft, meeke, and gentle in answering. Quercome thine aduerfacie with benefites and gentlenelle. Andaboue all things, keepe peace and bnitie: bee no peace breakers, but peace makers. And then there is no doubt. but that God the authour of comfort a peace, wil grant by peace of conscience, and such concorde and agreement, that with one mouth and mind, we may glouifie God the father of our Lorde Jelus Theilt: to whome be all glozie, now and for euer. Amen.

The Ereafter shall follow sermons of fasting, praying, almes deedes, of the natiuitie, passion, resurrection, & alcention of our Sauiour Christs of the due receiving of his blessed body and bloode, vndet the forme of bread and wine; against idlenes, against gluttonic and drunkennes, against couctousnes, against enuic, ire, and malice, with manie other matters, as well fruitfull as necessarie to the edifying of Christian people, and the encrease of godly living.

come to content out burners and

Godfane the Queene.

Imprinted at London by Christopher
Barker, Printer to the Queenes

Cumprivilegio Regiæ Maiestatis.

et ba vie no meze divelich conques: de chachach bene a calfeulder, nobse let him dec a foder connapier. He that hath ca malitious flaunderer, now ier him dec a feuing comme the im easter, ap, bee hat noce, ensuing no ibt, ace one ude

des, iour vn-and vith g of